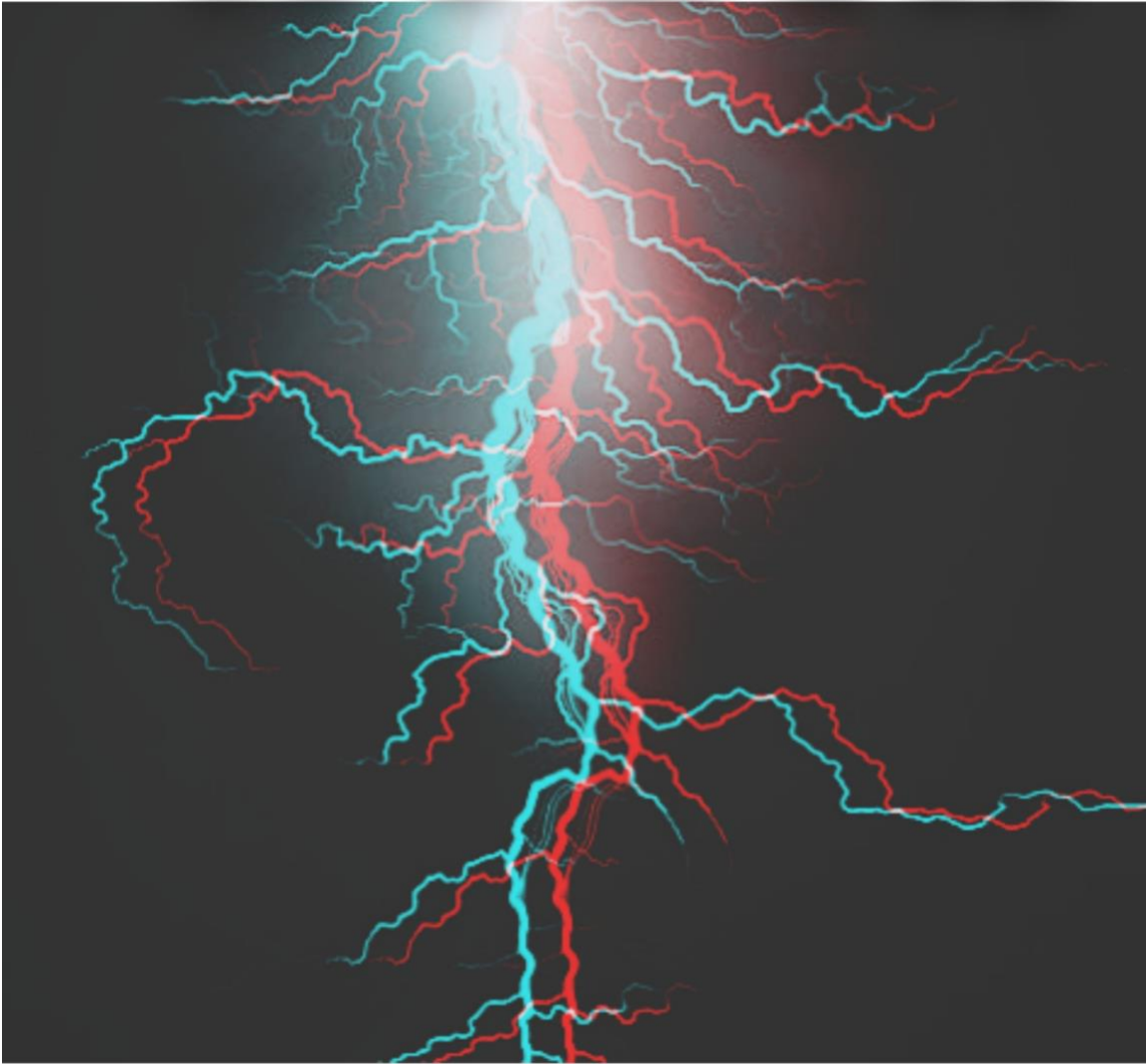


Wrath



Author
Keabetswe Mahlaba

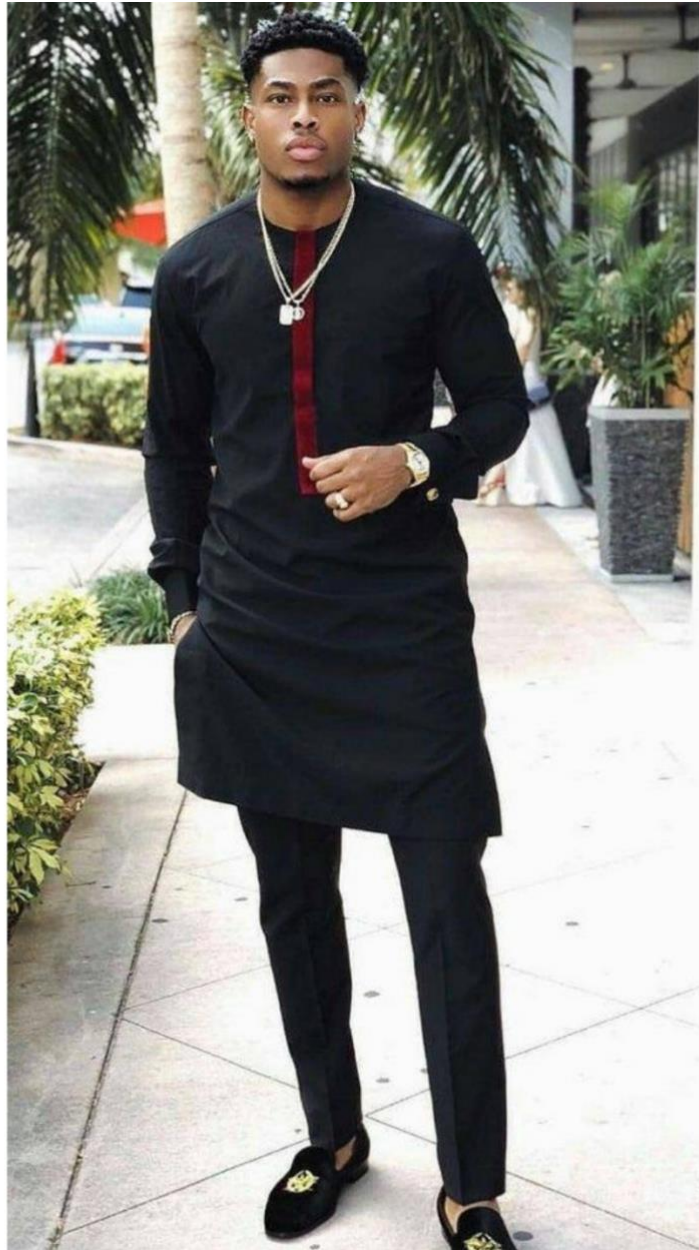
Africa



Royalty



Sky



Asavela



Langa



PROLOGUE

INSERT 1

We are seated around the big table , awaiting him to arrive

He's late , which is unlike him . He's never late , he's always on time

Kevin : where is he ?

He's looking at me , everyone is looking at me

Me : the fuck you looking at me for ?

Clive : the guy is getting impatient

Me : are you fucking going to tell him that ?

He downs his glass of whiskey

Me : exactly as I thought

A few moments of silence , he walks in

Africa : so ?

He's still standing

Kevin : finally you grace us with your presence
your grace

He says in a mocking tone , the gun shot that
goes through his shoulder he wasn't ready for it

Kevin : what the fuck ?

He groans in pain , everyone gets a hold of
themselves

Me : I believe we can start

Clive : right , well Leonardo Ferrari has asked for
15 girls .

Peace : we all know his taste , so it shouldn't be a problem

Clive : true , except this time he asked for a different kind

Kevin : what do you mean ?

He has his hand on his bleeding shoulder

Clive : that he wants a different taste of girls this time , and all 15 he has specified what kind

He passes the file around the time , I take it for Africa

Peace : but this is utter nonsense

I look at them all , and they're shaking their heads

Clive : I exclude myself from this , there's no way I can find such girls in two months

Kevin : this is bullshit

Me : even the mighty Kevin

Kevin : fuck off

He gets up

Africa : sit your ass down

He doesn't need to be told twice he sits back down

Africa : I'll get to you , and no one better get in my way

Nods here and there

Me : with that being said we'll take our leave

I get up with the file , Africa leads the way I follow him we leave heading to our cars

Africa : you're going to Joburg for this

Me : must I ?

Africa : Sky I'm not asking you

He gets into his car and drives off

Me : great must be lovely being me

I get into my car as well , better go say goodbye to baby mama .

.

.

.

Royalty

I haven't eaten in two days , and here I am throwing up absolutely nothing solid but the water I've been pumping my stomach with

I get up and rinse my mouth , I have eye bags under my eye . Even sleep has deserted me

I fix myself up and walk back to the bar , my favourite person walks in . She grabs a seat in front of me

Me : the usual

Asa : shit babe you look like shit

I give her a faint smile

Me : you already said shit twice

I whisper that shit word

Asa : heaven has a front row seat saved for you

Me : yeah right make fun of me

Asa : no wait , actually right next to Jesus and his father

Me : wow shut up

She laughs

Me : are you here to drink or what ?

Asa : and to give you tips

I hand her a beer , my best friend is no classy lady

Asa : what's wrong ?.

Me : question should be what isn't wrong ?

Asa : talk to your mama

I hate bothering her with my problems , but I haven't seen her in a week

Me : you went home ?

She nods taking a sip on her beer

Me : well you saw its bad

Asa : forget this shit , what time does your shift end ?

Me : an hour more maybe

Asa : let's go out

Me : I'm tired , been on my feet all day

I need the tips to put food on the table

Asa : just an hour , mama is asking

I hate it when she does this

Me : fine , but not today

Asa : urgh

Me : I need to go buy food

Asa : for those ungrateful

Me : my parents

She looks down only because she's angry , I
attend to other customers and leave her to cool
down

Few minutes later , she walks to the table I'm at

Asa : a talk

We move further from everyone

Asa : I'm sorry

Me : it's okay

Asa : you're coming home with me today

Me : no , I don't want to bother your parents

Asa : my apartment

Me : okay

Asa : I need another beer

Me : I'm coming

She walks back to her seat , I finish taking the order

It's days like these when it's tough , that I work behind the bar and waiter the tables as well

The tips come in handy , I have two parents who are not working . A younger sister who has a new born , and all these people all depend on me

When there's food everyone gets a piece except me , that's why I hadn't eaten in two days

Yet they all have eaten , I'm just pushing for better pay and tips . So I can be able to buy

enough food month end . And being a bar lady
and waitress that's how I do it

I still have school on the other hand , I'm doing
my second year at Wits doing Pharmaceutical .
It's tough being me

.

.

.

Asavela

I hate how my friend slaves herself , for everyone
else but herself . I'll talk to her manager so she
can get a day off , I'll pamper her like crazy
because she deserves it . Pity tonight is not
working for her , but it's fine

As long as she'll be at my place , I know she'll
eat and sleep well

My phone rings I answer

Me : baby

Sizwe : I've been waiting on you

Shit , I totally forgot about him

Me : I...my sister is not well

Sizwe : why are you doing this ? Breaking your
promise

Me : baby my sister is sick very bad , why do you think I haven't been able to call or text you back ?
Do you really think I'll lie to you

Fake tears are on point

Sizwe : okay , I'm sorry okay

Me : Sizwe leave me alone , I can't believe you'll do this to me

I drop the call , acting all angry . He calls back I ignore it . Few minutes later a bank notification comes through

He's just sent R5 000 apologizing , he send's another message saying I should take my sister to the doctor and get her some meds

A mere thank you is what I send back

I don't love Sizwe , he's just some sponsor who makes sure I'm well taken care of

And I take care of his needs that his wife is failing to do

He's much older than me , and well I don't mind

It's not like I come from a broken home , I do have the love of a father . I just love money , how I get or make it doesn't matter

INSERT 01

Sky

New home , for the next two months . I hope
Joburg will be good to me

First things first , find a whore to fuck and keep
me busy while I'm here

I don't do well with starvation , it frustrates me
very bad . And when I'm frustrated a lot of things
always go wrong , people suffer and get hurt

My phone rings and it's my girls I answer

Me : my beautiful people

She laughs

Tumi : babe we miss you already

Me : I miss you too baby mama

I'll never call her babe or anything that suggests otherwise . She's just my baby mama and that's it , and of course as the baby mama she takes care of me . By all means , physically and sexually . Until I can find a woman who will get my heart , baby mama takes the lead

Tumi : two months is too long

Me : it'll be over before you know it

Tumi : okay , I was just saying goodnight and please behave there

Me : I plan to and give my baby girl a kiss

Tumi : I will

Me : I love you both

Tumi : we love you too

I drop the call , I can never say I love her

individually . Tumi and I met on a job , she was just fucking beautiful

I couldn't hold it in my pants , so one thing led to another

We fucked , 9 months later she gave me the most beautiful baby girl ever

So yeah in that way we're tied together , and I don't mind

We're doing this co-parenting thing very well

.

.

.

Royalty

Never a dull moment with Asavela , she's too loud and all over the place . But we get along just fine , I love her just as she is

She's a first friend I made at Wits , and since then we've been friends until this day . 4 years and hopefully still going on many more years to come

We spent the day doing shopping and all , I don't bother to ask how she gets the money she always has

Because I know she's very much underhanded , and does a whole lot of things I don't approve of. Unlike me she's an only child , her family is well off and she has everything and anything she needs even more

Asa : now we hit the club

Me : come on , it's late I have school on Monday

Asa : Monday is still a day away , it's Saturday
come on

Me : no , you go I'll rather sleep in

Asa : that's not happening

She drags me off the bed , amazes me how a
skinny person has such strength

Asa : please doll up and let's go

I drag my already tired self to the bathroom , just to freshen up

I wear black skinny jeans , purple t-shirt with black sneakers and a black jacket

She's in barely nothing but a little black dress , with heels

It can never be me , but she has no problem being her

Asa : let's go

I work at a bar , but I've never been to a club before , for fun or just myself

.

Langa

I wasn't in the mood but Sizwe made sure to make me come here

One of his whores is here , he wants to fix some shit with her . Because they had some crazy argument

Sizwe : I can invite them over right ?

Me : them ?

Sizwe : she's with a friend

Me : come on don't do that

Sizwe : it's harmless fun

Me : I don't do fun , harmless or not

Sizwe : you're too uptight , no one is going to find out

Having Sizwe as a friend always gets me in shit

He gets up and walks over to where they are , my phone rings . Unknown number I answer

Me : yeah

Voice : at the location tomorrow 10:00 Am not a second later

He drops the call

Me : why must they always send him

I put my phone away

Sizwe : well ladies here we are , and this is my
good friend Langa Zulu

I wasn't interested until I saw this thick mummy.
They sit down

Sizwe : bafo his is my lady and her friend

Me : don't they have names ?

I'm looking at her , and she's not even looking at me

Sizwe : Asavela and Royalty

What a name !

Sizwe : so what can i get you babe ?

Asa : ciders will do

He calls a waiter over an orders for them.

Temptations come in all forms , and this is mine right here

Their drinks come , her friend offers her but she refuses

Me : who comes to a club and doesn't drink ?.

Royalty : I do

The attitude , as low as it is you can still feel it

Me : that's stupid don't you think ?

Royalty : I work in a bar , I serve drinks I don't drink them . Is that also stupid

I side smile

Me : what a come back ?

This one is mine , even if it's just for a night I
don't care

Me : what do you want ?

Sizwe is so hooked up on his woman

Royalty : red wine only merlot

Me : I shall deliver

I get up to get her a bottle , wine always gets
them ladies in the mood

.

Royalty

I don't get drunk like ever , it doesn't matter how much I drink . I never get drunk

And this guy is trying to get me drunk , he's really in a for a surprise

When I was 19 life was so real to a point of no ignorance

And I turned into alcohol , it got so bad my body got immune to alcohol

Me : can we go ?

It's late and I know Asavela she can spend the whole night here

Asa : you want to leave ?

Me : no

I say annoyed , I just said we should go . And she asks me this

Asa : okay I'm sorry , fine let's go

Sizwe : but babe , we're still having fun

Asa : I can't have her leave on her own now , can I ?

Langa : I'll take her home

Hell no

Sizwe : then it's sorted

Asa : are you crazy ?

She shouts getting up

Sizwe : and now ?

Asa : I don't even know him , and you want him
to take my sister home ?

Langa : it's not like I'll harm her

Asa : I don't know you , Royalty let's go

See as crazy as she is , she has my back like no one has

Sizwe : you're just overreacting

Asa : yeah sala (stay)

We leave and she's not happy with her man at all, it's going to be a long night for sure

.

.

.

Asavela

I wake up with such a banging headache , serves me right for drinking like a fish last night

Only because I wanted to milk Sizwe , nothing
much nothing more

Royalty : here you go

With one of her remedies , I take the cup and
down it . Not knowing what it is nor asking

Me : your mama loves you

Royalty : your man has been calling

Me : he must not bore me , after that shit he did
yesterday

Royalty : you're still there ?

I don't want to lie he pissed me off , even though that yellow boned bearded man was all of that

Royalty is my sister more than she is a friend , and there's no way I'll put her in harm's way like that

Me : I'm sorry he even said what he said

Royalty : that Langa started it

Me : and Sizwe shouldn't have even agreed with it

Royalty : it's too early for this

Me : I'm angry at him , and he should leave me alone

Royalty : okay I'm leaving I'll see you tomorrow

Me : please take your groceries with you

Royalty : okay bye

She walks out the room , I lay back down . I know she'll lock she has her key , and mine is with me here

.

.

.

Royalty

There's Sizwe right as i walk out , he was just about to knock

Me : hi

Sizwe : is she here ?

Talk about rudeness , I nod

Sizwe : okay

He tries to pass next to me

Me : she doesn't want to see anyone

Sizwe : I'm not anyone but the man who pays
this apartment

This is why I'll never like ever depend on a man ,
because next thing he will be controlling me like
this

I don't know why Asavela puts herself through all
of this with this man

Sizwe : leave I don't plan to kill her , if anything I
want to apologize for yesterday

It's not my business , I leave he goes in . They
will fix whatever it's bothering them both . I catch
a taxi home , arriving I find my father passed out
on the couch he's drunk without a doubt

My mother is nowhere to be seen , and Okuhle's
child is screaming his lungs out crying from the
bedroom

I put the groceries in the kitchen and walk out to my shack

I don't live in the house with them , my parents think at 24 I'm old enough to be having my own house

I can't afford to , because I'm busy taking care of them so , I can't even go out to rent

I take my shoes off put on slippers and go to buy some ice pops it's hot

Walking down the street , here is Langa Zulu . In the dusty streets of Soweto

Langa : Royalty

Me : hi

I walk past him he follows me

Langa : I'm sorry if I offended you last night

Me : it's done and I'm over it , but take it as a lesson .

Langa : lesson ?

Me : next time don't offer a stranger more especially a girl to take home , unless she asks

Langa : noted , but can I ask to take you out for lunch ?

Me : no

He's too good , too handsome and he looks like the type with money I just can't

Langa : anywhere you want , even in a busy public place

Me : I said no , and when I say no it's a no

Langa : I'm a very persistent guy

Me : good luck persistent

He leaves me with his perfect smile , and I'm an
idiot I know . Just this is real life , I know better
than to aim too high . I'll get hurt and never
recover

Or I'll get burnt and it'll leave a permanent scar .
Even worse I'll go up so fast I'll fall down soon .
It'll be like I didn't even go up to begin with

.

.

.

Sky

I walk in the house and he's already here . He's alone , that's new I expected him to bring his guys

Me : you kept the time

He knows I don't do well with lateness , I took that from Africa

Langa : must he always send you ?

He's annoyed , but so am I . I would rather be anywhere in the world than in Joburg looking for girls to traffic

Me : there's no other Sky , so yeah

Langa : right

Me : we all know that

Langa : what do you want ?

Me : 15 girls and you have two months to find each and everyone there

I hand him the file , he takes a look at it

Langa : I'll get my guys on it

Me : where you keep the girls , I don't care to know .

Langa : right

Me : and most importantly , I don't want any mistakes

Langa : I know my job Sky

Me : I don't want anyone on my back Langa

He looks down

Me : glad we understand each other

Langa : we do

Me : and if you can do it in less time , I will be

happy and he will be pleased

Langa : I'll try

Me : don't try , do it

I walk out leaving him , Langa owns taxi's both at Bree and MTN rank . He will have a better chance at finding these girls we need

.

.

.

INSERT 02

Asavela

Show me the money and all is well , I'm no easy target at all . I just make a choice that's it

Sizwe : tell me you forgive me

He pounds in harder , I'm just screaming .
Grabbing the sheets , my hands all over his upper body

Sizwe : come on baby

There's no way I'm going to say anything sane , I don't like embarrassing myself

I won't say nothing until he's done , he takes both my boobs into his hands

He moves back and just pounds in harder and deeper , I'm feeling a mixture of pain and pleasure

But it helps me reach my orgasms , I bite my hand to muffle the screams

When I'm done , he's had his end . He's just looking at me

Me : what was the rough sex for ?

Sizwe likes giving me sex roughly if I've made him angry or so

Sizwe : do you forgive me ?

Me : seeking forgiveness , you should have be gentle not rough

Sizwe : you walked out on me , talked to me like I was your mate

Me : whoa babe stop , and please let's not go there again . I won't lie and say I wasn't upset

I remove my legs on him , he spent the night and we never even talked about what his friend did the other day

Sizwe : so your reaction?

Me : it's very much justified , you and that friend of yours sounded like perverts

He laughs

Sizwe : wow babe you know me

Me : still a woman is always killed in South Africa by a lover or husband , I can take risks with my life that's fine . But not with my sister's

Sizwe : point taken

Me : good

Sizwe : but you still owe me an apology

A bruised ego of a man is the biggest thing ever
.

Royalty

Was my mother displeased after finding me at home this morning

While I arrived Sunday , and it's Tuesday today.
That's what happens in this house . No one cares about me until they run out of something , then they'll be needing to find me

Running away from her I just left without even eating , I still have some money on me I'll grab something at work

I've just attended my lectures , and if I had it easy I'll be going home and sleep

But a night shift is waiting for me at the bar , no rest for the Wicked

I haven't seen Asavela since Saturday , and I have no phone she can't reach me anyhow

I arrive at work , and change into my work uniform . I'm early for my shift , but I'll start working anyway . The night goes by I even forget to go buy food , as it gets too busy

People have money to waste even during the week , but it's all good for us

As soon as I get a chance to go out , I run for it. There's a café down the road it's open 24/7 . A cup of strong coffee or an Espresso will do

I grab my Espresso and a Dagwood , go to the till to pay

Voice : can I pay for that ?

No ways

Me : I can pay for my own meal thank you

Langa : I know you can , I'm offering to

Me : no

He takes the things from me and walks to another till to pay for them . There's no way I'm leaving my food , I really lack pride

I walk towards him , he's standing by the door .
As soon as I get to him he hands them to me

He walks away , I feel bad

Me : Langa thank you

Langa : you're welcome Royalty

He doesn't even look at me , he's really walking
away

Me : bummer

I walk back to work , thinking about that yellow
bone tall bearded man

Me : Royalty get a grip , he's way above you

Yes , I shouldn't even have any thoughts about him at all

.

.

.

Sky

Middle of the night and I'm woken up by a call , I reach for my phone and answer

Me : what

Africa : Sky I am not your baby mama , I don't get to call you

Fuck

Me : but do you see the time ?

Africa : what makes you think you get to ask me questions ?

Shit , he sounds sane and sober as always

Me : I'm seeing Langa tomorrow

Africa : did I need to ask ?

Me : no , I got held up . But he should have something to show for its been a week

I'm just saying to him so he doesn't get pissed ,
the girls that are needed are quite unique and
may be hard to be found

Africa : let me not call you again

Me : please

He hangs up on me , now my sleep is gone .
Doesn't he sleep ?

.

.

.

Asavela

I'm home this weekend , I can't disappear for too long . They might have suspicions about me, and that won't be good at all for me

Dad : how is school ?

My father bores me when he calls a whole University like Wits school

Me : it's fine , just work

Dad : that's why you haven't come home in two weeks ?

He pays attention to everything , and it's annoying

Mom : leave the child alone

Me : thank you ma , because I was at varsity

I was with some Mexican dude for a whole week
I don't even remember his name . And this week
I was just at my apartment , Sizwe came around
when he could

Dad : I wasn't suggesting anything

Me : because where would I be without being at
school ?

They both say nothing to that

Mom : where is Royalty?

My mother is very found of Royalty , she wishes she had a son . Because then my brother would marry Royalty , and she would become my mother's daughter in law

Me : fine just swamped with school and work

Dad : I don't understand how a 24 year old is taking care of a family on her own . I really dislike irresponsible parents

If I had the means , I'll take my friend away from there

But I know she won't agree to live with me at my apartment , more especially knowing Sizwe is the one paying for it

If Royalty could be away from her home , she would stop supporting them

.

.

.

Langa

In 7 days only 3 girls have been found , I can't fault my guys . We have a task on our hands , and not just everyone can do it

Sky : right

Me : what does right mean ?

Sky : they're good

I don't even know why he's here checking them out , it's not like I'll mess this up

Sky : will you find the remaining 12 in time ?

Me : yes

Sky : okay then , he will be pleased

Me : then be happy

He shoots me an evil eye but I don't care . Sky has some crazy seriousness thing going on , that's why Africa always puts him first

But he's way much better than Africa himself , that one is a sheep in wolfs clothing

Sky : I'll be in touch again in a week

Me : must you ?

With just a cold look he walks out , maybe I should start ranking myself . I'll have a better chance to spot these girls , we can be done sooner and Sky will leave

That's all I want , my phone rings I answer

Me : hello

Thando : Anathi is not feeling well again

Me : okay I'm coming

Thando : we're going to the doctor meet us there

Me : send me the location

Thando : okay please hurry Langa I'm scared

Me : okay

She drops the call and sends her location

.

.

.

Africa

He walks in , and the smile he has only a woman can give a man such a smile . In this case a girl

on my boy , I don't like this . This boy is whipped
and he's too young

He settles fine on his chair and even straps
himself in , I don't take chances with his safety

That's why I'm teaching him to do things himself ,
because it's not like he's safe with me

Tyler : good day daddy

Me : good day young champ

I drive looking at him at the mirror

Me : you happy today

Tyler : yes very much

Me : what happened ?

Tyler : can we get something to eat ? I'll tell you all about it

Me : of course , where do you want to go ?

Tyler : waterfront

This boy is too expensive , it's like he's working.
Kids his age eat at wimpy and spur , not 5 star
restaurants . I take a curve heading to
Waterfront, we arrive I park the car we get out

One thing he always does , is taking my hand into his . I let him be we walk inside and get a table

A waitress comes to take our order

Me : steak just medium rare

The look she gives me , it's like you want to feed a child meat that's not well done

Me : young champ , what are you eating ?

Tyler : ribs with some fries , onion rings and some veggies . Not a lot and don't put the broccoli

She writes it down amazed

Tyler : oh and a vanilla milkshake

She walks away smiling

Me : so I'm spending so much money , what's the story ?

He laughs first

Tyler : daddy , Kea has just agreed to be my friend

Men and women

Me : who is Kea again ?

Tyler : the new girl in my class

Me : okay , so now you're friends and you're happy

Tyler : I gave her R10 and she gave me a cheek kiss

Hell no , not with my son

Me : you gave her what ?

Tyler : R10

Me : Ty where did you get the money ?

Tyler : uncle Sky gave me lots of money last time

Sky has a mental problem , what grown man gives a 6 year old money ? I know I don't

Tyler : I'm sure Kea likes me

Me : because you gave her money yes , see Ty here is logic women will always go and choose where the money is at

Tyler : daddy

He's reprimanding me and for what I don't know

Me : okay

I'll let him be he'll burn and I'll remind him of this moment , women are not to be messed with

Why does he think he hasn't seen me with a woman ever ? I fuck and pass , feelings are just fucking messed up and complicated . More especially where women are concerned

.

.

.

Royalty

It's really quite today and not too busy , I even got to have time just to study

Right behind the bar , because I can't sit down
with my books at the tables

Voice : can I have Irish whiskey

I look at him

Me : this is some serious stalker vibes

He smiles

Langa : this is a bar

Me : mhm

Langa : I'm here to drink

Me : right at this one I work ?

Langa : why not

Me : okay , I'll get you drink

I fix him his drink and hands it to him

Langa : thank you

I nod

Langa : I'm sorry

Me : for what ?

Langa : making you uncomfortable the other day

Me : lesson learned and you already apologized
right we're over it

Langa : but can you allow me to take you out on
dinner ?

Me : no

Langa : do you know how to say yes ?

Me : I think so

He smiles , this man is handsome

Langa : you always say no

Me : because that's a no question you asking

Langa : don't you eat ?

Me : I do

Langa : why would you say no to dinner ? When we both have to eat

Me : why ?

Langa : why what ?

Me : why do you want to take me out ?

Langa : simple to get to know you better , I think
you're an amazingly interesting beautiful woman
I'd like to know

Wow that's some whole speech right there

Me : when ?

Langa : even tonight , but whenever you're free

Me : Sunday

Langa : where do I find you ?

Me : seeing that you always pop up where I'm at
I'm sure you can find me

He laughs , I leave him and attend tables as people start walking in . I haven't had a relationship since high school , maybe it's time I get out there , it won't hurt right?

.

.

.

INSERT 03

Langa

I finally got the girl , all I needed was a yes to a date and it's happening

I walk in the ward and she's crying , this sight breaks me . I feel like I'm useless like there's nothing I can do to help

And I'm failing them , but what can I do ?

Me : please stop crying

She lifts her head and looks at me

Thando : what if we don't find and a donor then...

Me : he's going to be fine

Thando : you don't know that Zulu

Me : please stop worrying , I'll do everything in my power to make sure he gets a donor okay

Thando : but how come we are not a match ?

Me : I don't know

Thando : this is all so wrong

Me : and I'll make it right

I have to go make a plea to the man himself ,
otherwise I will lose my boy

Thando : thank you for coming , I know you're
busy

Me : don't thank me for doing my duties baby

She nods

Me : I'm starting at the rank tomorrow

Thando : it's okay

Me : do you need anything ?

Thando : no , I'll stay a few hours and go home

Me : okay , I need to take care of some business
I'll be back a bit later

Thando : okay

I kiss her cheek and leave , I don't want to hurt
myself by being here anymore . I'll rather go see
Royalty and head home , tomorrow I'll make

means to get a donor

.

.

.

Royalty

I knew he will make a plan and here he is ,
parking a few houses away from my home . I
walk to his car he gets out and opens the door for
me , such a gentleman

Langa : you look beautiful

Me : well thank you , you don't look too bad
yourself

He smiles getting in the car , and he drives away

We're just in casual clothes , nothing fancy and
so I hope he's not taking us anywhere fancy

I wish I had seen Asavela so she can know that
I'm with him , in case anything happens

Langa : I thought you were going to ditch me

Me : I'm a woman of my word , and I never go
back on it

Langa : I like

He goes to Waterfall

Me : where are we going ?

Langa : you'll choose where , I just prefer it be here

Me : okay

We get off , he takes my hand into his . I choose Ocean Basket . As much as I lack , I'm a lover of sea food and when I get the chance to have them I don't shy

Langa : is it a thing ?

Me : what ?

He pulls a chair for me I sit down , I wonder if he's really such a gentleman or its just for show

Langa : the sea foods , good expensive wine

I smile

Me : a lover

Langa : mhm interesting

We order a platter to share , he settles for red merlot wine like myself

Langa : so who is Royalty ?

I never know how to answer that , I don't know what answers to give to that question

Whether to say who I am like my likes dislikes and all of that , or to just give basics about my life

Langa : right , I'll tell you who Langa Zulu is . A taxi driver , 27 years old last born of 4 boys . Both mother and father deceased hails from uMlazi in KZN . I'm a sucker for great and finer things in life

Did he just say taxi driver ? Okay it doesn't matter what a man does

I'm just a bar lady , but Langa doesn't look anything like a taxi driver at all

The man drives a Range Rover , he's wearing casual clothes that surely costs three times what mine costs

And he's a taxi driver ? No ways he's lying

Me : marriage , any kids ?

Being Asavela's friend it's a must to ask such

Langa : do I look like I'm married ?

He asks smiling , and I swear this smile is my weakness

Me : they never do

Langa : but we're talking about me.

Me : which means you don't ?

Langa : that answers your question

Me : not really , but I consider this first day really sitting down with you . If there's more surely I'll know

He chuckles

Langa : alright , indulge me

Me : Well I'm from the free state in Harrismith , parents just moved years back here . A second year student at Wits university , a first born of 2 girls . Both parents still alive yes , and that's right just about it

Langa : what are you studying at Wits ?

Me : pharmaceutical

Langa : beauty and brains , such a combination

Me : I'll take that as a compliment

Langa : it's sure is one , so any boyfriends ?

Me : no

Langa : good , then I can shoot my shot and I
hopefully stand a chance

Me : but there could be a child

Langa : I don't mind being a step father

I laugh , only because I did not expect to hear that

Langa : for real

Me : wow , so men really are nothing like us women ?

Langa : meaning ?

Me : it's not that easy for us to love another woman's child and raise them like ours , I don't see myself being a step mother . I'll never date a man with a child

Langa : women are women , and I'm me by the way other men wouldn't settle being step father's

Me : you won't have to be one either

Langa : so is that your way of saying , you make me yours ?

Now that I rethink my statement , it sure suggested that

Langa : don't shut me out , let's not label anything until you're ready . For now let's just take it as it is

Me : that's better

I don't think a definite boyfriend and girlfriend
tittle is best right now

.

.

.

Africa

I'm on call with my niece , she's sulking and
reporting what the boys have been doing to her.
Liyana is a complainer but what can I do , we're
tied for life

And I'm the only one who pays attention to her
stunts

Liyana : uyeva tanci (you hear uncle)

Me : ewe (yes)

I even speak Xhosa now , just because of her

Liyana : manje zolanda mna? (so will you come fetch me)

Me : ndizoza (I'll come)

Liyana : tatam yabiza (my father is calling me)

She's done ranting now she can leave me , that's women for you

Now I'm left all alone , because she's left the phone as well

Asante : hi

She wants to mock me

Me : lorato lame (my love)

Asante : she went on and on and on and then left
you right ?

Me : please stop bothering her

Asante : Liyana likes attention she's a bore

Me : she's the only princess

Asante : not the only child , we're tired

Me : she wants me to come fetch her

Asante : Africa you're so busy , I don't even know how you make time for Tyler

Tyler : aunt , I'm a little man and not a child . I don't need daddy watching me all the time

She laughs

Asante : if it isn't my smart mouth young champ

Tyler : I'm better than Liyana

I can leave , because now it's their time

Me : ke a go rata aker (I love you)

Asante : le nna kao rata (I love you too)

I get up and the young champ sits down , I leave them . Tyler is too smart for a child his age , but already at 3 he was in preschool

A mixed race preschool in the US , my father insisted on it . Hence he speaks English so fluently so young, he knows Setswana but he's only learning it now . I won't have no child of mine , not knowing how to speak his own language

.

.

.

Sky

Langa requested to meet , we're only on the second week

I doubt he has found other girls , but I decided to humour him and see him

Me : so I'm here

Langa : I need to see Africa

Me : no

Langa : it's important Sky

Me : I'm here Langa , talk to me

He looks around , we're in some club . It's during the day so it's not that crowded

Langa : I...

Voice : Langa , how nice to see you again

Such a loud mouth women , but she's fucking beautiful . Skinny yeah but damn beautiful

Langa : Asavela how are you ?

Oh that's her name

Asa : I'm good and yourself ?

Langa : can't complain

Asa : okay well I was just greeting let me leave

Langa : bye

She walks away

Me : who's that ?

Langa : she's off limits

Me : fuck off , she's not even on the file

Langa : yeah even for you back off

Me : why ? You fucking her

Langa : no , but someone I know is

Me : well you know me too , and while I'm in Joburg I won't mind to fuck her

He sighs

Langa : can we just talk about why we here and not her

Me : I'm listening

Langa : I need a piece of a liver

Me : for ?

Langa : my Someone I know needs it for his son

Langa is bullshitting me , I know we do dangerous work

So yes we hide those dear and close to us , but he can't lie to me

Me : blood type

Langa : O

Me : how soon ?

Langa : very soon

Me : let me see what I can do

Langa : can't you talk to Africa for me ?

Me : no , I'll get you the liver .

I get up

Me : get me that girl

Langa : you can't compare the two , this is life
and death

Me : all I need is a number Langa

I walk out , I better make calls so I can get that
liver . I will not bother Africa with such

.

.

.

INSERT 04

Royalty

I'm avoiding my family as much as I can , with March exams approaching I need to focus on that . And not taking care of them , even though it's not avoidable . I don't understand why we had to move from home and come live here

Joburg is not the city of gold and opportunities to everyone . While it seems to work for some , it's not for all of us

I started off selling things at the streets before I found this bar job . We got here and the only thing we have is just that RDP house in Soweto nothing else

They both couldn't find jobs , my sister thought it best to run around after men

And today she has the consequences of that , a whole baby that has no father . Now we all can't starve so one has to slave , and unfortunately that's me

I have a morning shift before my midday class , working at the bar in the morning is useless . Not more people come , so that's less tips . While I live off those tips but a job is a job

I walk out and lock the door , I'm met by my mother at the gate

Me : dumela mama (morning mom)

Mom : wena Royalty o ngwana o jwang mare heh (what kind of a child are you ?

What have I done now ?

Me : ka eng mama ? (With what mom)

Mom : ware ka eng ? Ha rena dijo , Kapa o batla re bolawe ke tlala pele ?(you ask with what ? We don't have food , or do you want us to die of hunger first?)

Wasn't it just a few days ago I came home with groceries

Me : holokile mama , ke tlatla ke rekile dijo mantsibuya (it's okay mom , I'll buy food and come with it later)

Mom : hobaneng o sa nfe tjhelete ke tla reka ? (Why don't you give me money I'll buy)

When they have money , the only thing they think of is alcohol

Me : ha ho hlokahale ke tla direka nna (it's not necessary I'll buy them myself)

I say already leaving , now I'll be short of transport money

A car stops right next to me , scaring me a bit . I sigh in relief as I see it's Langa

Langa : I'm sorry I scared you, come get in

Free ride okay , that's saving up . He opens the door I get in

Langa : you don't look okay this morning

Me : family

Langa : wanna talk about it ?

Me : no

So he can run away , I'll rather not

Langa : damn woman you love saying no

I laugh

Me : understandably , because right now I don't want to talk about my family issues

Langa : okay fine , but if ever you need to talk
just know that I'm always here

He takes my hand into his , I find this gesture
somehow sweet

Me : okay

He drops me off at work and offers to walk me
inside

Me : thank you for the ride

Langa : you say thank you a lot

Me : because it's polite to

Langa : I do things because I like you , so no need to thank me always

Me : right , don't deem me ungrateful when I stop

Langa : I won't , anyways let me go . What time does your shift end ?

Me : around 12:00

Langa : I'll come fetch you

Me : I'm going to campus

Langa : that's fine

Me : fine how ?

Langa : that I'm still coming

Me : no need I'll take a taxi

Langa : yes you will , I'll come with the taxi

Oh yes he's a taxi driver

Langa : laugh all you want ,I'll see you soon

He brings me closer to him , way too close for comfort . He just kisses me and I respond to the kiss , my body reacts . No regrets whatsoever

Langa : I'll see you

I watch him walk away to his car , I walk inside

.

.

.

Asavela

I tap him on his shoulder before he gets inside
his car

Langa : Asavela

Me : Langa , you and my sister

Langa : mind giving me your numbers ?

Me : don't avoid what I just said

Langa : it doesn't need an answer so

He's so arrogant

Me : what do you want my numbers for ?

Langa : someone I know asked for them

Me : someone you know doesn't have a name ?

Langa : you can ask him that

Him ?

Me : you know I'm seeing Sizwe right

He gives me a bored look and shrugs his shoulders

Me : so why are you giving me off ?

He laughs

Langa : don't feel yourself this much , I don't remember saying I'm giving you off

Me : how will Sizwe feel about you asking for my number's ?

Langa : the same Sizwe that's married

This is where it hits when people know the dirty laundry , and dirty little secrets

Langa : now don't get embarrassed , you know your situation

I know it , but it doesn't make it easy when people talk about it

Langa : let's not do this with each other , either you want to give your number or you don't

I hold my hand out he hands me his phone I save my number

Langa : that wasn't hard

Me : it's to be used , and not decorate

He gets into his car and leaves , I walk inside the bar

I'm not here to drink but to see my friend

Me : your mama is here

She smiles

Royalty : you've been scarce

Me : yeah I know , how are you ?

Royalty : I'm good and I see you're great

Me : good looking handsome , good smelling
men always gets me good

Royalty : which one do you have now ?

Me : I'm hoping some brown skinned cutie , I saw
with Langa during the week

Royalty : Langa is Sizwe's friend

Me : I'm well aware , and wena my good friend
who has suddenly gone bad was busy changing
spits with him

She laughs

Me : so when did that happen ?

Royalty : when did what happen ?

Me : Royalty Mofokeng , don't play fool with me
okay

Royalty : it just happened

Me : girl no , you don't get to do me like that . Not
after I received some crazy rough sex that left my
pussy burning . All because I stood up for you

Royalty : I can't tell what I don't know as well

I take her hand

Me : listen to me , for once just do you for you .
Forget everyone and everything and just do
Royalty . You deserve to be happy , and I have a
good feeling that bearded man will be your
happiness

Royalty : you think so ?

Me : yes

She smiles

Royalty : okay I'll go all in

Me : good for you , now let me go . I'll see you at
campus

She listens to me not always nor all the time ,
this time around she did

I hope Langa won't hurt my friend because if he
does I will not forgive myself for it

.

.

.

Africa

He sits down

Me : who told you to sit down ?

Kevin : come on don't be unreasonable

Me : get up

He sighs , getting up

Me : the fuck do you want ?

Kevin : we have a problem

Me : you waiting for me to ask what ?

Kevin : one of the girls died

Me : and the world is full of girls , find one
replace her . Must I do it for you ?

Kevin : there's no need for you to treat me like
I'm one of your boys

Me : then don't act like one of my boys , I don't even know what you doing here

Kevin : Oceans just put it out there , that we should stop reporting to you

Me : Kevin leave

Kevin : right

He walks out , I continue working like he wasn't even here

A call from Sky comes through

Me : what ?

Sky : Langa needs a liver for his son

Me : and ?

Sky : I found a donor , I'm reporting so you know
I'm not rouge

I drop the call

.

Langa

She gives me one bone crushing hug

Me : it's okay

Thando : you really did it ?

I kiss the top of her head . She's happy that's all that matters

Sky came through for me , Anathi got a donor I now know he's going to be fine

Me : our baby is going to be fine

Thando : thank you

Me : I told you it's my responsibility no need to thank me

She pulls out and wipes her tears , looking at him

Me : we just need to move him here so the operation can be done

Thando : it won't be done here ?

She knows nothing and I'll rather keep it that way. And this liver wasn't found the legal right way . There's no way he can be operated in a legal hospital

Me : only the best for him

Thando : as long as he's going to be fine

Me : he will be trust me

Thando : I do trust you baby

A man does anything for his family , and I'm just that man

.

.

.

Asavela

Married men with marital issues are a problem

Right now he's sulking probably maybe because he got into a fight with his wife

I don't get why don't they just leave when they're unhappy , instead they go out and cheat but still be sour about it

Me : Langa is now dating Royalty

That gets his attention , I guess his friend didn't tell him

But that Langa can't be trusted , he's the same friend that wanted my number to give to another man

Sizwe : your sister told you that ?

Me : I saw them yesterday

Sizwe : saw them ?

I walk closer to him and straddle him his hands rests on my ass

Me : kissing

He smiles

Sizwe : that must have been hot

Sizwe is nasty and creepy like that , he's that man who wouldn't mind suggesting a three some. Or even have women make out right in front of him , how twisted is that ?

Yes it's fucking hot and all of that , but still kinky and nasty

Me : I didn't get horny from that

He laughs

Sizwe : we should kiss

Me : not before you tell me that he's okay and clean

Sizwe : he is

Me : don't lie

Sizwe : Langa is not a fucking shitty man like myself

Me : okay that's good enough for me then

Sizwe : now make me happy

I get down from him slowly , and lower this pants
exposing his dick

He's already hard , this man starves at his house.
What's the point of having a wife ?

I circle my tongue over his tip , he thrusts I give
him leeway to be inside my mouth

Before he thrusts I pleasure him , playing with his
balls . Sucking on his dick

Sizwe : oh fuck

I deep throat he thrusts in slowly , a person will
die for dick

I let him have his way until he shoots up his cum
inside my mouth

I push his dick out and spit , I'll never swallow
cum

Sizwe : that's a waste

My throat is painful , I won't say nothing
Sky

Langa sent the number and it's been a week I
should attend to it

I've been busy , didn't have enough time to get to it . But now that babe can be mine and we'll have fun

Until I leave , I still have a full month and one week left here

I call my favourite ladies first

Tumi : we are about to sleep

Me : is that how my calls are answered now ?

Tumi : you didn't call all day Sky

Ah she's acting up

Me : where is my daughter ?

Tumi : now you're angry ?

Tumi is my baby mama that's it , nothing else .
We fuck but it doesn't give her the right to ask
questions or dictate to me at all

Tumi : I'm sorry

Me : no don't , you know I'm busy working . But
you're making it sound like I was just ignoring
you . What the fuck is that ?

Tumi : Sky...

Me : where is my daughter ?

This woman has no claim over me , as much as she'll always be the number one woman after our daughter

Tumi : here she is , and I'm sorry

I also hate hurting her

Me : wait

I take a sigh

Tumi : yeah ?

Me : I am sorry too okay

Tumi : okay

Me : now are you good ?

Tumi : it was a busy day at the store , I'm tired

Me : okay rather get rest . I'll call in the morning

Tumi : you ditching her now ?

Me : best I do , to give you rest . Just kiss her for me

Tumi : okay , I like the sweet you

Me : I'm sweet all the time hence you always
crave me

She laughs

Tumi : bye

Me : you don't love me ?

Tumi : we love you always

Me : and I love you both

I always say the both so she never gets it
confused

Tumi : goodnight baby daddy

Me : goodnight baby mama

We hang up , I make the long awaited call and she answers . Beats me what she's doing this late

Asa : hello ?

Me : hi , Sky here . Is it possible to see you tomorrow ? Let's say 14:00 any place you pick
She goes quite for a while and I wait for the answer

Asa : I don't know any Sky

Me : so text me the place so you can know this one

Asa : what ?

Me : and don't get it confused next time . You can only know one Sky never more than that

I drop the call , it'll eat her up and curiosity always finish women . So she'll text the place , just so she can see me in person

.

INSERT 05

Africa

I'm on call with my father and these with him
never ends , and I don't have the time with back
to back meetings

I'm one guy who does illegal things through and
through

I don't hide behind legit businesses and all of
that, no way . I believe if you're something be it ,
don't use alternative motives to hide it

Dad : where is my grandson ?

Me : he has a girlfriend now , so I hardly see him

He laughs , and this girlfriend business between my son and this Kea girl bores me

Women are savages period , but Tyler thinks he knows it all . So I'll let him be

First heart breaks are the worst

Dad : bring him over for the holidays

With school holidays approaching soon , maybe that wouldn't be such a bad idea after all

Me : tell him , we know he'd like that

Dad : anything to get him away from you and your criminal ways

Me : don't start with me

He doesn't approve , but then what sane parent will approve of their kids living the life of crime

Unless the patent is also in it , then yeah they'll agree

Me : I believe we are done

Dad : one day I'll pick your cold body at the streets

Me : okay

He drops the call on me . I love that man but he frustrates me

But taking Tyler to UK for the holidays works just fine for me

My father just recently relocated there from the US , and my son is a sucker for going anywhere. As long as it's not anywhere in South Africa , he doesn't even like visiting my sister in Eastern Cape

.

.

.

Asavela

Curiosity killed a cat , so the famous saying goes but the cat has nine lives . I only have one , which is why I'm here to see my friend . Let her know what is what

Royalty : so you were saying ?

She puts the tray down

Me : give me 5 minutes I'll be done , I can see you're busy

Royalty : I'm all ears

Me : so your man asked for my numbers , and don't get mad it wasn't for him .

Royalty : Langa is not my man and I'm not mad

Me : what ? I thought you were going all in ?

Royalty : I'm still me , sane mind and all but yeah you're saying

My sweet innocent friend , she doesn't easily lets her guard down . I applaud her for that

Me : so yesterday this guy calls me and asks to meet today

Royalty : and you said no

She's mocking me

Me : so now I need you to be my angel , if anything happens to me confront that man of yours

Royalty : I hope you're going to no man with a wife

Me : it's all about choices okay , and these are mine

Royalty : common knowledge really

My phone beeps , it's from the guy he's outside to pick me up

Me : I am gone , and if all goes well please give Langa a piece of the red velvet

Royalty : you're so disgusting

I laugh walking out , and my jaw drops when I see that handsome brown skinned man

Me : composure

I walk to him , hoping my walk is not embarrassing

Me : hi

Sky : hi yourself , shall we go ?

Me : aren't you even going to tell me if you're the guy or not ?

Sky : my name is Sky can we just stick to that ?

A man who commands , he's already in my books

He gets in the car , doesn't even open the door for me . Okay scratch being a gentleman

I get inside the car and he drives off to North Cliff

The house is beautiful no lies , but I'm not here to admire it . Or even pay attention to the details

Sky : make yourself at him

He says leaving me downstairs and he goes up

Me : okay

Like any normal human being , when being left alone in a house you don't even know

You look around , it's not called snooping it's just looking around

Voice : are you done ?

He startles me , he's been gone for a while

Me : I...well yeah

Sky : something to drink ?

Me : Sky....why am I here ?

Sky : right

He walks closer to me , his scent lord have mercy upon me . He smells manly , like the man he is . And not like a boy with a cheap perfume , this is a whole cologne

Sky : I'm one man who doesn't go around , in just simple terms I like you . And I want you

What ? I'm screaming I want you too , but something is different with him

He's definitely not the Sizwe type , and this seriousness scares me

Sky : either you give me a chance or you don't . There's no thinking about it , or needing time

This is unfair , I don't feel like I'm being given a chance or choice

Me : saying yes to what you're saying right now , would definitely make me look cheap in your eyes

Sky : I don't go for cheap , saying it now or later doesn't matter nor does it make a difference . But I want it now

I feel like asking he wants the pussy now , me and my mind

Me : okay

Sky : okay what ?

Wow , some men though

Me : you said you want me , so you can have me

He leans down , I'm screaming he takes me now.
He rubs his lips on mine , and I just want him to
have me

Sky : dump that Sizwe now , and come find me
He walks away leaving me wanting to cry

Me : what the

So he knows about Sizwe ? But what is Langa
playing at

.

.

.

Langa

I look at my son , and knowing he's going to be fine pleases me . The operation went well , and now we're just waiting for him to wake up . The doctors are very optimistic it'll be soon , I just want him out of this place

Thando : please go home get some rest

She's been sleeping here day and night

Me : you should go home , I'll stay with him

Thando : babe you have work , watching over him is my work right now

Me : we're a team together in this

Thando : you do so much for us

Me : it's my job isn't it ? And I do it out of love

She smiles

Thando : please go home

Maybe I can use this time to see Royalty , I haven't seen her in a few days

Because I've been busy trying to gather the girls , my boys are working day and night we can't afford to slack

Me : okay

I get up walk to her , we kiss briefly

Me : you need anything ?

Thando : just some fries , if you make it back later

Me : okay I'll bring them

I leave and drive to Soweto , I know her schedule now

When she's at work , or school even when she's at home

This not having a phone business is not working for me , because now I have to wait around and hope she comes out

I wait for 30 minutes and spot some kid , I send her to go ask for her for me

She goes and after a few minutes she comes out, like she was sleeping . I open the door for she gets in , those thick thighs all out . She's wearing a short summer dress

Me : sorry I woke you

Royalty : it's okay , I need to study anyways

I've never seen a person who's so occupied in life

Me : isn't it too much ?

Royalty : what ?

Me : studying , working and staying at home

She sighs , clearly it's a lot for her

Royalty : I can't afford to stay on my own so
yeah, and I have to work I'm the only
breadwinner at home andnever mind

She doesn't like talking about her problems , this
is where I need to push to get her

Me : I can help

Royalty : I don't need no help

Me : come on , it's help I'm just offering

Royalty : help with what exactly ?

Me : maybe a place to stay

Royalty : no

Me : why not ?

Royalty : please don't offer to help me then next thing ask to have sex with me

Shit , I'm a shit of a man I know that . But even this makes me feel that we men have failed women . I'm offering to help for other reasons , so she can let me do things for her

Like be there for her financially , and she thinks I'll want to have sex with her

Me : come on , when will you let your guard down and just trust me?

Royalty : my friend trusted you enough to give you her numbers , and now she's meeting some strange guy all because of you

Me : is there anything you two don't discuss ?

She smiles

Royalty : yes

Me : like what ?

Royalty : like where do I stand with you ?

And then there's that

Me : we're still on your pace right ?

Royalty : I think we've gone over it

Me : because of my request to help you ?

Royalty : isn't that going to boyfriend duties ?

Me : it is , and maybe that's what we should do .
Be official

Royalty : I think so too , but let one thing be clewr. If you dare do me one wrong , I will leave you . I don't stand being used Langa

Me : already scaring me ?

She laughs , I'm fucking good at this there's no way she'll find out anything

Me : I won't hurt you

Royalty : I know you will hurt me Langa , I just want you to know as well that when you do I'm gone and there'll be no going back

Me : okay

I move her braids off her face

Me : come spend the night at my place

Royalty : we there already ?

I chuckle

Me : I won't touch you unless you let me

Royalty : okay , but I have morning class

Me : I'll drop you before I go to the rank

Royalty : okay I'll pack an overnight bag

Me : pack a few clothes

She laughs

Royalty : it's just one night

Me : and for the other coming nights

Royalty : wow

Me : wow indeed , and while we're still there . I
take care of my woman , you'll be getting a
monthly allowance and the apartment

Royalty : I'm not with you for your money

I laugh , she may not be but it's what's going to
make her vulnerable to me and that's what I want

Me : no buts please , go so we can leave . I have to go see the guys from the rank

Royalty : you're going there with me ?

The exaggeration

Me : no , I'll leave you at my house . Don't worry

Royalty : okay then

She goes out going to her home . I'm going to my other house in Pretoria East my wife doesn't even know about it . I can never take another woman to the house I share with my wife and son

.

.

.

Sky

She walks in slowly and walks towards the bed

Me : and ?

I ask before she even lays down

Asa : I've called he doesn't answer

Me : I need to hear that you told him you're done with him , so I will not have any problem killing him if he comes after you

Asa : I have a feeling you're not playing

Me : I don't play

She sighs

Asa : wouldn't it be better if I dump him face to face ?

I stare at her

Asa : but I sent him a message , see

She hands me her phone I don't take it . I don't have jealousy issues

Me : tomorrow

Asa : done

Me : come here

She gets on the bed and lays on top of me .
She's not easy even if she might look and
present herself that way

This woman has been broken by a man before ,
and this sleeping around with other man is a way
she seeks healing

It's the same as how most rape victims react , as
much as they hate and despise men . They sleep
around lie no body's business , it's a wall and a
protective mechanism they use

I see it all the time with these girls , some are able to pull through it

But some no , the same with her . She still holds her integrity

That's why she's making it a choice , so no man can say I'm using her

It's a use-use situation they get pleasure , she gets money and the soft life

Me : let's get one thing straight , I'm not any of those married men you dated . I'm your boyfriend and not some married man seeking pleasure from you. I'll take care of you however , and only because you're my girlfriend not because I gain

something from you . This is a relationship and not some otherwise situation

Asa : you...you know about....that

Me : I know everything , now do we understand each other ?

Asa : yes we do

Me : good , you're not going back to that place that man is paying for

Asa : but....

Me : no buts , I was not asking you . You'll spend the night here and go home tomorrow , until we

find a place for you . One I'll buy and it'll be in
your name I won't even have claim over it

Asa : but what will I say at home ?

Me : it's your home , why must you even say
anything ?

Asa : my parents are just difficult

Me : and I have a feeling you can handle them
just fine

Her breathing is so heavy , it's been a day she's
never had before

Me : let's shut some eye I'm tired

She settles fine on top of me , I hug her tight so she doesn't even get any ideas to run away

.

.

INSERT 06

Royalty

The braveness that's accompanied by the stupidity I just gained . Agreeing to be Langa's girlfriend , and spending the night at his place. Letting him have so much power over me , with the allowance thing and the place

Langa is like a chameleon , I don't think it's wise to go all in with him . A woman's gut and intuition is something to ever be ignored

I'm woken up by kisses all over my face and the stupid heart of course feels love

The mind is like be cautious girl , but the heart is disputing all of that

Langa : baby

His voice is too hoarse clearly he's just woken up himself

Me : what a way to be woken up

He deep chuckles

Langa : give me a kiss

With eyes closed I still find his lips and we kiss ,
the man is too touchy touchy

His hands are all over my body , making me feel
foreign feelings

And if he doesn't stop , I'll find myself naked .
Giving away my precious possession

Langa : let me stop myself

Thank god , he pulls out

Langa : you slept well ?

Me : I did

Langa : good , you should sleep over more

I laugh

Langa : that's a yes , the joys of having a girlfriend

I giggle hiding my face on his neck

Langa : mjolo is that not that bad (dating)

Me : I know nothing about that

Langa : wena you're just innocent , that's why I love you

I lift my head and look at him

Me : what ?

Langa : don't be so surprised , I do love you . I didn't say it right at the go to make sure you don't run away

Me : wow

Langa : I love you

I laugh smiling

Langa : and he repeats it

Me : yes he repeats it , and I love him

He flips me over , we laugh I end underneath him. And in nothing but his t-shirt this is dangerous . He plants soft wet kisses all over my face and neck

Langa : you'll never regret this

We lock eyes I cup his face

Me : I hope I never have to

This man is not out there , and I can't read
people . He lives in a double mansion in Pretoria
East , a whole taxi driver

I'm no fool , there's more to Langa than it meets
the eye

.

.

.

Asavela

I'm with a man now , and not just because of he's
old or married or whatever

But a man because he's that possessive , and he
is commanding

I don't know if this is the right decision or what ,
because Sky is nothing like any other man I've
ever been with

So here I am to see Sizwe , to break up with him.
Already Sky has people moving my clothes out of
the apartment

Sizwe : what the fuck was that message you sent
me ?

That's what he says seeing me

Me : please sit down

Sizwe : unganginyeli Asavela (don't shit on me)

A Zulu man swearing , you'll feel like the world is swallowing you up . But I'm a Xhosa chick and you don't do that shit to me

Me : listen if you can't be a grown up , and talk to me right . Then you're not even worth my breath , here take your apartment keys I'm done with you

He laughs annoyed , I hand him his apartment keys

Sizwe : you're what ?

Me : I'm done with you

I try to walk past him and he grabs my arm

Me : let go

I say with gritted teeth

Sizwe : you're going to regret this

I yank my arm off and leave , as soon as I'm out I let out the breath I've been holding in

I need to tell Sky about how this went , so if anything happens he will know it's because he told me to break up with Sizwe

He looked like a psycho in there , making threats like that . And now I have to move back home , I hate being home . I like my space away from my parents

Not that I don't like them or we fight but I just love being away from them.

.

Langa

Anathi is going home today , he's fine he's well

We couldn't be happier about that , I just have to cancel on Royalty

We were supposed to meet but now I can't leave my family , not today maybe tomorrow

I showed her a few apartments and she's chosen one that's closer to her campus

And not that far from her job , now that I don't appreciate . The whole bar job

But it's too early to even tell her to stop it , definitely when time goes on . And she sees that I can take care of her

One thing she agreed on , was a phone which I got for her this morning before dropping her off at school

Thando : that's everything

Me : okay I just need to make a quick call to one of the guys at the rank

Thando : okay

Me : I'll be quick

She walks to the car , I take my phone out and call Royalty she answers

Royalty : babe

See it's the little things

Me : my baby , are you okay ?

Royalty : yeah but tired

Me : sorry , and I can't come see you later on

Royalty : oh

She's disappointed

Me : I'll make it up to you I promise , an
emergency at work

Royalty : it's okay I saw you this morning spent
the night at your place so it's fine

Women can be a hassle

Me : how about you go home , if I finish early I'll
find you there

Royalty : I'm not going to your house without you,
just work babe I'll see you another time

I don't think she's pleased with me right now

Me : I love you

Royalty : and I love you

She drops the call on me , good thing she left that account number in the morning when I asked for it . I send her some money , I better get that apartment so we can get back on good terms

.

.

.

Sky

Someone is not happy about going home , but I will not have a girlfriend that's busy living in another man's place

Asa : must I ?

Me : this is your home , don't piss me off

She sulks I bring her closer we kiss for a few minutes

Me : you'll be out soon , I'll get you a place trust that

Asa : okay baby I do trust you

She leaves I watch her until she's inside the house and I leave

I'll need to have some serious talk with Tumi when I get back . I do feel something for Asavela, something that can be of solid

Which is something I don't have with Tumi at all , she's a baby mama we fuck from time to time

That's it , and if there's a new someone in my life she will have to be excused . Parenting our daughter is the only thing that will connect us

As soon as things settle I'll talk with Asavela and explain the situation with her . She will know I have a daughter , and the whole thing with Tumi

If we are to have a relationship that will survive , all cards need to be laid out on the table

I like order , that's why I made her break things
with Sizwe . And I won't be a hypocrite about it ,
make her be mine yet I'm not hers no ways

Royalty

Two days and I haven't seen Langa , he's always
busy or its excuses I don't know

But it's okay , I'm also busy at work and with
exams so it's fine

I'm out with Asavela , and the way her life has
just taken a dramatic turn I cannot believe

Asa : I'm telling you I already feel like a wife

I laugh , this Sky sounds like a control freak

Asa : this is serious though

Me : okay askies (sorry)

Asa : I have never been with a man who tells me what to do

Me : I know

Asa : how am I going to deal with this ?

Me : just fine he's not married , he's yours and he wants you just as you are . How lucky are you
heh

She blushes

Me : and my friend is in love , just that she's scared

Asa : I don't want to get hurt

Me : tell him that let him know , so he can tread carefully . And knows what will be the consequences if he does

Asa : you're giving me relationship advice ?

She gives me a funny look , I laugh

Asa : I shouldn't be doing this at all

Me : but you're doing it

Asa : and he's made me move back home

Me : that's your home Asavela , and the guy said
he'll get you a place

Talking about it , actually rigs that Langa
promised the same thing . And I've already
chosen an apartment

Can it be a coincidence ? That two guys come
into our lives and offer us all these things ?

And they happen to know each other , I don't
know but this doesn't seem well to me at all

Asa : and now ?

Me : nothing

I won't say anything , she'll think I'm being my usual paranoid self

.

.

.

INSERT 07

Langa

I feel like Royalty is avoiding me , she gives me those few minutes calls .

I get the past few days I've been so busy and haven't had time for her

With my son home , I just wanted to be a father .
And I really didn't want to leave my wife alone with him

But I'm not losing Royalty , I don't want to lose her at all . So I plan to make things right

I'm parked outside Wits , I know she had exams today . I hope we're still okay

I wait around for almost an hour before I spot her,
I don't call I walk out of the car to her

Me : baby

I say holding her hand , she's walking alone
anyways

Royalty : what are you doing here ?:

Me : we both know I only come here for you

She looks down

Me : please come let's talk

Royalty : I have to get home

Me : yeah you'll go home , but we need to talk

She says nothing we walk to my car , I open the door for her she gets in . I also get in

Me : first and foremost I'm sorry , I know I haven't been the best boyfriend as of late

Royalty : did I do something wrong ?

Me : no , I was just dealing with a family crisis

Royalty : oh

Me : yeah but it's all done now

Royalty : okay

Me : can I take you somewhere fast first , then I'll take you home ?

She nods , this conversation is so cold . She wasn't even that happy about the money I sent

She told me she doesn't want my money , but I begged her to keep it

I drive to Rosebank , that's where the apartment is at . We arrive and walk inside

Me : this is your new home now

Royalty : you bought it for real?

Me : yes , it's all yours . Now you can be close to work

I don't like that she's a bar lady , but for now I can tolerate it

Me : aren't you happy ?

She's not giving me the expression I was expecting to see

Royalty : good things never happen to me Langa, so this scares me

I bring her closer to me

Me : you're mine now and you'll know only good things

Royalty : thank you for this

Me : anything for my woman

She smiles , we're getting somewhere

.

.

.

Asavela

Being home hasn't been as bad as I thought it'll be . Even though it's some crazy distance , but I still make it to campus for my exams . And my parents are mostly at work , I'm at campus . So we're hardly in each other's space

Me : I must say though , it's amazing to have a real boyfriend

She laughs

Royalty : I need to meet this Sky

We are doing shopping for her new place , perks of the yellow bone bearded man

He even gave her a card , no limited budget . But my friend being my friend she's just buying necessities

Langa is not bad after all , the way he's taking care of my friend shows that

And I thought he was just going to play with her ,
it shows he keeps a different circle of friends

The likes of Sizwe who are cheats and liars ,
then oSky the kinds of men we need

Me : you'll meet him soon I tell you that

Royalty : can't wait

Me : he treats me so good , like a woman his
woman

Talking about him and he calls I answer the call

Me : Jali

Sky : baby uright ? I'm missing you

That's my boyfriend

Me : I'm okay

Sky : come spend the night

Me : okay

I'll never say no , even though we haven't even had sex . But sleepovers with him are always just the best

Sky : I'll pick you up later right

Me : okay baby

Sky : I love you

Me : nam I love you

We hang up

Royalty : so mjolo isn't that bad right ? (Dating)

She asks laughing I hit her shoulder

Me : leave me , I am happy and I hope this happiness doesn't leave me

Royalty : treat it right and it won't

She knows me

So this is not just saying but it's advice

.

.

.

Sky

Langa still needs to find 8 girls , they're fucking
dragging their feet honestly

I thought they'll be done with this job , before this
month

First week gone and only 3 left , makes me question if they'll find 8 girls in 3 weeks

When they've only been able to find 7 in 6 weeks, incompetent people are a bore

Africa : where are you with that ?

We're on call , being away from him doesn't mean I get to rest

Me : the guy from Columbia will be in touch

Africa : you handle it

Me : I've never dealt with intelligence before

Africa : and it's not like you don't know how to

This will bring wars over countries , the exposition of military intelligence is never a good thing

But Africa doesn't care as long as there's money and it's good , what happens doesn't bother him

Me : okay I'll get it done

Africa : how far are you?

I don't need him to get angry

Me : Langa is dragging his feet

He goes quite , I know time has gone by . And
we've never let a client down

More especially Leonardo Ferrari , he's one of
our best and pays good money

Me : I'm thinking of putting my guys on it , instead
and just finish this off

My girlfriend walks in , I've let her have that
freedom to just come whenever she wants to

Asa : hi babe

She mumbles that accompanied with a wave

Me : hi baby

I say it outside she smiles shyly and she walks past me because she can see I'm on call

Africa : wa jola monna (you're dating man)

That's a statement and not a question I just laugh, he can be on my case I'll never recover

Me : so can I put my guys on this ?

Africa : get the job done , hopefully you'll be able to leave your girlfriend and come back

Eish that's another thing , how will she feel knowing I don't live here in Joburg

Me : I'll call them right away

He drops the call , Langa will wait for now since
he just couldn't deliver just as quick

Me : babe

I call her our , after a while she walks in .
Wearing my sweatpants and shirt

Me : invading my wardrobe again

She sits on my thigh

Asa : I need to get comfortable

Me : you'll be much comfortable naked

Asa : for real ?

Me : yeah

She smiles getting off me and she strips naked , I
could fuck her right here right now

But I'll rather we talk and I tell her the truth , I
bring her back on top of me

Me : it's not cold right ?

She shakes her head no

Me : okay let's talk

Asa : I didn't do anything wrong right ?

Me : no you didn't

She sighs in relief

Me : we're two adults talking right , so don't act out on me . We're talking

Asa : okay

Me : so I have a daughter , Emihle she's 3 and lives with her mother . We're no longer together as a couple , but occasionally we fucked . I love you and want to be with you , but that can only happen if you agree to that and me with all that I am and have

This came as a shock to her

Asa : okay so now what's happening with the baby mama ?

I smile

Me : I'm here now , so nothing is happening just calls about our daughter when I need to talk to her . I plan to be honest with her about you about us . So that even the fucking can be cut off from us totally

Asa : you don't love her anymore ?

Women though

Me : no , nothing more than holding the love that she's my daughter's mother and that's it

Asa : okay

Me : you're not upset

Asa : I'm a bit jealous but I think I can work over it and be fine

Me : and I'll make sure you're fine , and you never feel that you're competing for me

Asa : thank you

I thought she'll react , over exaggerate and cause a scene but she took it well

Getting back home , I just need to sit Tumi down
and talk to her

Royalty

My mother gave me hell about moving , but I did
it anyways . I do send them money , and now it's
no longer my responsibility to see they buy food

If they're using that money for alcohol , then it's
their problem and not mine

It's been a week living on my own and it's not
that bad honestly

I've never lived on my own before , but it's
working perfectly just fine

I want to go to the mall since I'm off today and it's
weekend , but mostly it's just to get a few things

I started off at the rank , Langa made it a habit to
always drive me everywhere as of late

He takes me to work , to school and everywhere
else . But I want to ditch him today

And most of the taxi drivers know me now ,
because they always see me with him

I'm at Bree , I look around and I don't see him
anywhere nor do I recognise any other driver

I get into a taxi heading to mall of Africa . And it doesn't take long for it to be full

I love the attention he gives me right , but it also doesn't hurt to be alone without my boyfriend right

I'm seated behind the driver and he's playing maskandi music softly , making me miss my boyfriend

He's always playing maskandi music in his taxi , first time I saw him driving ranking I stopped my doubts that he's not just a taxi driver

The drivers phone rings and it's connected to the blue tooth , he answers

Voice : Nduna (boss)

I know this voice , it's Nkanyezi one of the taxi drivers who knows me very well . I didn't see this is his taxi , and I didn't see him

Voice : ndoda ngicela ungisize ungehlisele loyo sisi ohlezi ngomva kwakho lapho e'garage ngizom'thola khona (man please help me get off that lady that's seated behind you at the garage I'll find her there)

This is Langa

Me : Langa ?

I say as a whisper but he hears it

Langa : wena uzongisiza ucele u'driver ungehlele
lapho e'garage (you will help me ask the driver
and get off at the garage)

Now everyone is looking at me , Nkanyezi laughs

Nka : angiboni ukaMofokeng lona , angithi ufake
lezinto ze fake ekhanda (I don't it's her , she's
wearing these fake things on her head)

People laugh looking at me , I want to get off
right now

Langa : umshiye lapho e'garage loyo (drop her
off at the garage)

Nka : nduna (boss)

He drops the call and music plays again

Nka : kodwa kaMofokeng umenzani unduna (but what are you doing to my boss)

He says laughing

Me : mare Nkanyezi o ntjhebisa ka batho (you're causing me stares from people)

He laughs worse because I'm speaking Sesotho

Langa embarrassed me yhoh , and when we get to shell garage Nkanyezi drops me off

Nka : wait at that rock Neh , he will be here soon
and don't worry we'll be watching you

I just do as told and wait at the rock

.

.

.

Langa

I was at the rank when she was getting in the taxi
and I just watched her

Because I saw that she was looking for me ,
trying to avoid me she thought it worked

Me : sisi ngicela e'garage ungehlele ungene kule seat ngomva engena muntu (sister please at the garage get off and sit at back seat that's vacant)

She gives me an evil eye but I'm asking

Her : angifuni (I don't want to)

The attitude yhoh

Me : aii ke umaungafuni ukuhlala ngomva ngizokushiya lana ke mina (okay then if you don't want to stay at the back I'll leave you here)

I'm not going to beg another woman I don't even know , I have two in my life and I don't even beg them

At the garage I stop and spot her by the rock
she's even sitting down

Me : bantu abadala ngicela ukuphuma nje
kancani ngiyabuya (my elders I'm asking to get
off just a bit I'll be back)

They nod some say it's okay , it's always the
relationship between a driver and his passengers

I stop the taxi and get off running to her

Me : let's go

She looks at me and she's so bored , serves her
right for trying to ditch me

Royalty : Langa I'm hungry

Me : it's fine you'll eat at the mall

She holds her hand out I help her up we walk back to the taxi . The front seat lady has moved to the back , what was the attitude for . We get in and I drive

Me : ngiyabonga bantu abadala (thank you my elders)

They acknowledge that as well , I look at my girlfriend and she's sulking she's not happy at all

Me : bingelela (greet)

She looks at me

Me : ikhona intanga yakho ngapha ? (Is there your age mates in here)

She shakes her head no

Me : bingelela (greet)

Royalty : dumelang batho ba baholo (greetings elders)

They greet back with smiles and laughs , which causes her to sulk even worse it's so cute to watch I end up laughing

Royalty : did you have to ?

Me : baby you didn't die , and don't ever pull this stunt again

She nods

Me : glad we understand each other

I just want her next to me that's why I prefer to take her everywhere

.

.

.

INSERT 08

Asavela

Will I ever have a man that's mine and I don't have to share ?

But I can settle for Sky , he was honest and now I know he has a child

I don't mind that at all , as long as the baby mama will be able to respect my place in his life

And I'll respect her place as the mother of his child

Sky : what are you smiling about ?

I've been at his place the past few days

Me : just admiring you nothing much

Sky : I'm handsome I know

I get off the counter and walk to him

Me : and you're mine

Sky : yours and yours alone

Me : and your daughter

Sky : oh ?

Me : yes we share you , Emihle is your first lady
though

Sky : one man is blessed so much

Me : we're both blessed

And we really are more especially me , it's nice being in a relationship with someone

Who doesn't belong to a certain woman out there, I never knew I'll enjoy and love being in a relationship like this

.

.

.

Africa

I watch this boy busy taking his own damn good time walking to the car . To think out of my busy

schedule I always find the time to bring him to school and fetch him everyday

But no his girlfriend takes more priority than me , so he doesn't mind making me wait

I open the door for him , he gets in and straps himself in

Tyler : daddy

Me : Tyler do you have any idea just how busy I am ?

Tyler : I think I do

This boy , he thinks

Me : then don't ever make me wait for you ever again , more especially for a girl

He blinks his eye repeatedly , he must have taken this from my sister

Even though she blinks her eye lids

Me : understood

Tyler : yes Daddy

I drive

Me : papa wants you to visit him when schools close (grandfather)

He smiles , at least I'm forgiven now for acting out about the girlfriend issue

Tyler : you're taking me right ?

Me : if you want to go young champ , then yes

Tyler : I would like to go

Me : okay let's call him , when we get home and you tell him

Tyler : he's still in the UK right ?

Talking to Tyler feels like talking to a 35 year old with a 6 year old voice

Me : yes he moved there for good now

Tyler : great

I watch him getting all excited , my father is the only grandparent he has

And they get along like nobody's business , even when he was young

He spent more time with my father than me , we started getting close 3 years ago when we moved to South Africa

Me : but you'll be going alone

Tyler : you have work I know

Me : then we'll do anything and everything you want to do , to make up for when you have to go okay

Tyler : okay daddy

I always try to make up for lost time

I didn't get along with my father the king not before he passed on

And I cried for lost time , but he was gone and there was nothing I could do or say to bring back the time

When I met Dante he closed that gap and it felt
like I never even lacked a father's love

I make sure and try by all means that Tyler
doesn't feel what I felt

Already he has no mother surely somewhere
there's that gap and he feels it

.

.

.

Royalty

Things have just been great , Langa is the best . I
don't think I've ever been this happy like ever , he
makes me feel so complete

And I never thought I would feel this way about him , but I've fallen

Asa : so are you keen on going out tonight ?

Me : I thought Sky has taken away these thoughts from you

She laughs

Asa : he has

Me : then let's go out , but not at night during the day that's fine

Asa : you're such a bore but it's fine

I finish packing , she has just moved in her apartment and my friend chose that we be neighbours

Sky had no problem with that , and I still haven't met the guy yet they've been together for two weeks how crazy is that

Asa : so he has a daughter and the baby mama is still in the picture

She's too calm saying that

Me : what ? Wait how do you know that ?

Asa : he told me

Me : what ?

Asa : yeah , I just appreciate the honesty though

Me : as you should , he didn't lie so that's big

Asa : I know , that's why I'm giving us a chance
for real

Me : thank god , honestly you deserve nothing
but the best . Not what you were doing

We laugh , I learnt that you can tell a person to
stop something over and over time and time and
again

But they won't stop , unless they decide to stop .
No one let's go of anything unless they're ready
to

Asa : I'm happy

Me : and you're happy I see it, and it makes me
be happy for you

Asa : that's why we're going out

Me : I don't mind as long as we do it now , not at
night

She laughs

Asa : fine

We continue setting up everything , I'm more
glad she'll be closer to me

.

.

Langa

Sky deciding to finish the job himself has just caused me a lot of money

The 8 girls he will find himself I won't be getting paid for it at all

That's money gone that should have been paid into my pocket and I hate loosing with all my heart

Thando : are you sure we should go out ? I don't mind staying in and you don't look okay

Me : babe I'm fine let's go

Thando : okay , I'll get Anathi

She goes up I take my phone and call Royalty

Royalty : babe

Me : my love

Royalty : what's wrong ?

Me : huh ?

Royalty : you don't sound okay , is everything okay ?

I can't hide emotions I'm not good with that ,
that's why she probably can hear

Me : I'm fine , listen any chance that you come
sleep over ?

Royalty : why don't you come over ?

I haven't slept at her place so maybe I should ,
and it wouldn't hurt to get some piece of the cake
today

We have been together for weeks now , I take
care of her . It's not payment but she's getting all
and what am I getting ? Nothing

Me : okay

Royalty : so you'll come later or now ?

Me : why you asking ?

Royalty : there's nothing going on here , just that I'm helping Asavela move in so...

Me : babe it's fine , and I'll come later

She got that I wanted to accuse her

Royalty : anyway you can come anytime it's not like I have something to hide

Me : baby...

Royalty : don't Langa please , I never gave you any reason to doubt my loyalty . I don't know what this is now

She drops the call on me , Royalty is no push over . She stands her grounds and fucking challenges me

.

.

.

Asavela

A mini shopping never hurts anyone , we spent a bit on clothes

Asa : sea food ?

Royalty : yeah

We walk to Cubana , my friend is a lover of sea food . Royalty loves finer things , and I swear all she needs is money and she'll be set

We walk in and no coincidence , our eyes sets on Langa with a woman and a child . He even has a wedding ring on today , something I've never seen on him

Me : oh my god

I look at Royalty and she's seeing what I'm seeing . And there's no way the guy can get out of this one , this is a family . He can't even lie and say it's his sister or whatever

Me : let's go

I take her hand

Royalty : no

Me : what ?

Royalty : we came here to eat so

Me : babe don't do this to yourself

She ignores me and goes to sit down , Langa sees us and he can act . The guy doesn't even look uncomfortable , it's like we're strangers people he doesn't even know

I sit down , Royalty calls a waitress over and she orders . To my surprise no wine just juice

Me : I'm so sorry

Royalty : don't

Me : I said give him a chance , I should have known . He is Sizwe's friend

Royalty : can you just stop , he's married I see that and so I'm done with him . I'll go back home today

Me : babe

Royalty : the apartment is his , I will not stay there . And I'll send back his money all of it

If I know my Royalty I know she's made up her mind

Me : maybe there's an explanation why he lied

Royalty : no offence Asavela you dated married men knowingly , because you wanted to . I asked Langa if he's married or has kids and he just became clever about it . I will never date a married man , and he played me

She has this poker face on , but I know she's hurt . And I have a good mind to go to that table and give him a piece of my mind

But I don't want to embarrass Royalty , and she'll hate that if I do it

Her phone beeps she looks at it and by the annoyed expression no doubt it's pissing her off

Me : what is it ?

She hands it over to me , and it's a message from Langa . Saying he will explain she shouldn't cause a scene

Me : the nerve of this guy

Royalty : calm down , I don't care about Langa anymore okay

She's too calm for my liking , she can even kill a person and go on like it's nothing

Me : I've been an idiot , why didn't I ask Sky about him ? Surely he would have told me the truth , he's a better man than Sizwe

Royalty : it's done , let's eat so I can go pack and take my walk of shame and go back home

Me : sleep at my apartment tonight

Royalty : I'm back to being a bother to you

Me : don't say that , you'll never be a bother to me at all

Royalty : I shouldn't have let my guard down ,
and I wouldn't be here .

Me : babe

Royalty : don't mind me

Me : I'll go see Sky and come back okay

She nods , and I'm so angry . I really liked Langa,
why would he do this to my friend ?

.

.

.

INSERT 09

Langa

This is some fucked up shit , how did it come about that we end up in the same place

How the fuck am I going to explain this , what will I even say ?

Anyone can see that we were a family , and Royalty is no fool she saw what was happening

No wonder she didn't even bother responding that message . How she stayed and ate and didn't bother looking my way , just her friend who didn't hide just how pissed she was with me

Thando : is everything okay babe ?

I give her a side smile

Me : yes

Thando : we shouldn't have come out , you're not okay Zulu

Me : I just wanted you and Anathi to be have fun

She takes my hand into hers

Thando : we should have fun as a family

Me : okay I'll throw my sour mood out of the window

She smiles

Thando : please pay and let's go home

Me : babe....

Thando : please my love

Me : okay , but I need to go fix something first .
So I'll drop you guys at home and be back quick .
I'm sorry for ruining lunch

Thando : don't be silly , there'll be lots and lots of lunches to do

Me : I don't deserve you

Thando : that's another silliness

She laughs

Thando : go do your business we'll take a taxi home

Me : no ways

Thando : come on don't be difficult for no reason

When God grants you a good woman , but you're just a dick like myself

Me : okay , I love you

Thando : I love you more

She sure does , I pay the bill and call Nkanyezi to come take them home

I'll rather have someone I trust , as soon as he arrives I get in my car and drive to Rosebank

I arrive at her apartment , and it's open I walk inside there's no one downstairs . It's a three room apartment , a kitchen lounge and bedroom with a bathroom combined

I walk upstairs and find her packing her clothes , and clearly only the one's she came with

Not the one's brought with my money

Me : baby

She doesn't even look at me , I walk closer to her. She's not even crying nor showing signs that she even cried

.

.

.

Royalty

I don't know who or what does Langa think he is , to still even call me baby after what he's done

Langa : please lets talk

He is out of his mind

Langa : stop that and let's talk

Me : it's over we are done , I told you that dare hurt me and we are done

Langa : can we talk like rational grown ups

Me : well what happened to you being a grown up person and telling me the truth ?

Langa : that's what I'm trying to do right now

Me : I'm not interested

I'm not like these girls , who get hurt and still go back over and over again

Not me , I don't play that game .

Me : I'm leaving , take your apartment back and your money and everything you ever did for me

Langa : now you're just being childish

Me : childish is you lying to me , I don't date married men Langa . I'm not a home wrecker

I look at him , and he has one scary look

Langa : what home did you wreck ? My wife is still with me she doesn't even know about you

The nerve of this man , I'm defeated

Me : you're so sick like....

A slap lands on my face I bite my bit causing it to bleed

Langa : see what you're making me do ? When we can just sit down and talk about this

I lift my face and look at him , I will not cry . He can beat me and do whatever he wants to do , I will never give him that satisfaction to see just how much he's hurt me

Langa : I love you , doesn't that count for something ? I did everything for you so what if

I'm married that's no reason to walk away from us , nor to be ungrateful to everything I've done for you

Me : and I never asked for anything

This is what I hate about letting men take care of you because it gives them some sick idea that they own you , and well no one owns me

Once I let my guard down and I get this much burnt , serves me right for even opening my heart to a man

Langa : you think I'm your friend huh ?

I take my bag to walk past him , he pushes me down I fall

Langa : you're not going anywhere

He's changed completely , I never knew this man. He's a monster and right now he's about to destroy me

Langa : I never got anything from you , and now you want to leave me . Uyahlanya (you're crazy)

He walks out , I get myself to get up and take my bag . Walking out the bedroom door he's back , he pushes me inside

Me : Langa let me go

Langa : uyahlanya , I'll repay myself then you can fucking go to the next nigga I won't even give shit (you're crazy)

He rips my shirt off , I've never been this scared .
You hear that women get raped by men in their lives

And you never think it'll happen to you , or someone you know . It's something you read or hear about and scares you

Well here it's happening he's just ripping my bra and skirt like it's nothing

Me : Langa don't

And that gets me a few slaps and punches , that lands me down on the floor . I won't beg him , nor will I cry . No man will have such power over me

He roughly parts my knees and unbuckles his pants

Langa : after this me and you it'll be like we never even met , nor crossed paths

He says as he shoves his dick rough inside of me, he doesn't even bother being gentle

He's really raping me and he's enjoying every second and minute of it . I ignore the pain I'm feeling between my thighs , I'm just telling myself that I will not give him the satisfaction of crying nor begging him to stop

He won't rape forever he will stop and be done ,
I'll gather myself back

The hour he spends having his way with me ,
feels like an entire day

He disgusts me to the core leaving his cum all
over my stomach

I should be glad he didn't cum inside of me ,
leaving his disgusting seed inside of me

Langa : see , you brought this on yourself

He gets off me

Langa : now we are square and done , and keep everything I don't fucking need it

He puts on his clothes , my body is so numb . I watch him walk out , it's a while before I hear a car driving out

I hope it's his , and I break down . Until there's no more tears to cry anymore

I crawl my bloody self to the shower , I probably shouldn't right ? And go report him

Well it's useless , I let hot water all over my body . I scrub but that won't take his scent off now will it? Only I'll be hurting myself . I'm already dark as it is , I don't need marks on my body

When I'm done I dry and lotion put on a tracksuit and sneakers . I scrub the blood on the floor , I will not leave my blood in this apartment

I take my bag and it's hard to even walk , I go to Asavela's apartment. She left me her key . I lock the door and cuddle myself into a foetus and cry

.

.

.

Asavela

Whenever Sky says we have to talk I'm like what bombshell is he going to drop on me now

Sky : I don't stay here

What did I say ?

Me : what do you mean ?

Sky : I'm from Cape Town , I just came here to work

Work ? Sky doesn't even look like he works , except being on his phone and laptop

Me : babe what are you saying ?

Sky : that whatever I came to do will be done in a few days , and I have to go back home

Me : wow

Sky : don't do that shit with me , I'm not breaking up with you . We just have to do this long distance , until we can make means to be together

You find love and boom , it's long distance

Sky : for now you have to come every two weeks so meaning I'll see you twice a month on weekends

I'm used to seeing my man whenever I want to , now it's reduced to twice a month

Sky : don't go quite on me

Me : what will I say ?

Sky : that yes you can do it or not

Not ? Does he know how much I love him ? I'm happy being in a relationship with a man that's not anyone's husband

Me : it's sad I don't like it , but I can do it

Sky : that's all I need to know

Me : okay please take me home

Sky : now you're sulking ?

Me : no , I just have to go see Royalty she's in a bad space because of Langa

He looks so uninterested , but takes me home anyways . Sky kept me hours and hours and I just wanted to be at home with my friend

Sky : I'll see you okay

Me : okay babe , my friend needs me

Sky : I understand

I give him a kiss briefly and get off the car , he also drives away . I walk to my apartment the door is locked , I unlock using my key since I left the spare for Royalty

I'm welcomed by a breaking sight , my friend on the couch and she's crying

Not your loud wailing cries but the heart breaking
silent cries

I knew she was hurting , I find myself just trying
to comfort her

Me : I'm so sorry , he doesn't deserve your tears
okay

She just pulls out and wipes her tears off

Royalty : he raped me

No , no ways there's something wrong with my
ears

I get off the couch and pace around

Royalty : he came around when I was still packing , he didn't even apologize or try to make excuses for himself . Just that he's married so what ? I told him it's over and he slapped me , I tried to leave he saw it best to rape me beating me up . And like the coward of a man he is , he left when he was done

That's a broken voice I've never heard before

Me : then why are we still here and not at the police station ?

I shout and not at her , but I'm angry beyond words

Royalty : why ?

Me : that pig violated you Royalty

Royalty : and the police are going to do something about it ?

Me : what ?

I ask defeated sitting down

Me : did he threaten you ?

Royalty : this is South Africa , how many rape victims get justice ? I am not going to become a statistics of another rape case gone unsolved or cold

I know my friend she's strong I don't doubt that , but this has broken her . She won't make it

Me : baby

Royalty : no , I don't need any of that

She cuddles back to the couch , I don't know
what to do or what to say . What does one say ?

.

.

.

Langa

The door opens she walks in

Thando : babe I'm starting to get worried now

I keep staring at nothing

Thando : you've been like this since last night ,
twice now I've found you on the shower floor

Me : I'm fine just leave

She switches the water off

Thando : please dry

She hands me a towel I just look at it

Thando : Zulu what's going on ?

I look at her , and events of yesterday come
playing in front of my eyes

I'm a lot of things , but a rapist what's that ?

Thando : now you're scarring me , why are you
crying ?

She crouches down in the shower

Thando : Zulu please talk to me

And say what ? I cheated on her and raped the
girl when she found out I'm married and was
breaking up with me

.

.

Sky

I have drama waiting for me back home , I wish I can take Asavela with me . But she has school so compromises have to be made , and this is one of those

As long as we keep the communication going on, I know we will be fine . And I'll make sure she comes twice every month for a weekend

My guys just need one girl and we are done , hence I'm sure by the end of the week I'll be leaving . I take my phone and call my woman , she's been quite since last night . Her phone goes to voicemail , I call again but Africa's incoming call comes in I answer

Me : sure

Africa : stop answering your phone like I'm your friend Sky

I chuckle

Sky : I have the girls just one left , I'll be back end of the week

Africa : monna ako ntlogele ka dilo tsa banyana bao (man leave me with these things of those girls)

Me : isn't that why you called ?

Africa : no , I'm heading to the UK I'll probably not be here when you get back

Me : so what must I do ?

Africa : Ferrari won't get those girls until I'm back, it'll be just a few days . I'm taking Tyler to Dante

Me : alright

Africa : finish up and return back

Me : will do

He drops the call , now with him leaving I have my work cut out for me

Asavela

Royalty is not okay , but who would be okay after such an ordeal has been done to you

I don't know how I am or how I feel , she woke up this morning and went to school

Who does that ? After having gone through what she went through

I missed Sky's calls yesterday I couldn't find the courage or strength to talk to him

I'm always crying , you'll swear I'm the one who was violated

I arrive at his place I hope he hasn't left ,
because I couldn't even bring myself to call him

I knock at the door , after a while he opens in
nothing but just his briefs

I can't ignore the dick print , and I'm not happy
that he's opening the door dressed like this

Sky : I've been calling

Yeah I know

Me : were you masterbating ?

His seriousness can kill a person

Me : and why are you opening the door dressed like this ?

Sky : because I saw that it's you

I give him that you're lying look , and he pulls me inside . He shows me his laptop on the coffee table and it's giving him accesses to seeing what's happening outside

Me : okay but then why are you hard ?

Sky : it's hot , and I haven't had sex in two months

I can sleep with him , but after what happened to my friend I don't know how I'm feeling

Me : I'm not okay

Sky : I see that , sit down talk to me

I sit down next to him , I don't want to talk about my friends situation yet I need to burp what's inside

Me : something bad happened to my sister and she's not okay at all

I cry he holds me

Sky : don't talk about it , I'm here for you . It's okay you don't need to say it okay

I nod against his chest crying

Royalty

After writing I decided to go to Soweto , I don't know why . Because it's not like my family will care but here I am

Walking inside the yard I'm welcomed by shouts cries and swears , it's a spectacle people are even watching

It's chaotic the door is wide open and I stand right at the door as I see everything that's happening

My mother is crying swearing and fighting my father

My sister's clothes and her baby's are all over the floor scattered around

She's standing by the corner with her child , she looks beaten up her face is even swollen you

Dad : stop being crazy , calm down and stop making noise

He shouts back , my mother doesn't hear anything

Mom : your own child , how could you ?

This woman is broken her cry is too sad and painful , but which child are they talking about and what happened ?

Mom : how can you sleep with your own daughter and give her a child ? I'm busy raising my husband's child with my daughter don't tell me to calm down

My ears go death , my sister's child is my father's child ?

Me : ma !

She looks at me and just breaks down , my father looks down in shame

I can't do this I've heard enough , I came here with my own problems only to be welcomed by theirs I just can't . I run out not knowing where to

Until I'm a few streets away from home , I start walking and wipe my tears off

I take my phone and call Asavela , she got me a new phone since I left the one Langa brought in that apartment

Asa : babe are you okay ?

Me : I'm in Soweto

Asa : why , what are you doing there ? Tell me you're coming back

Me : yes , I'm just taking a walk . I need to clear my head

Asa : Royalty

Me : don't worry , I went home and it's a mess . I didn't even tell them anything

Asa : please come back now

Me : I'll be back trust that

She sighs

Asa : okay , but keep your phone on okay ?

Me : okay , I love you

She's the only sane thing going on in my life right now

Asa : I love you most

We hang up I continue walking , not even knowing where I'm going

I'm so defeated and inside dead , don't let the outside fool you

I can't go on I'm failing so bad to , Langa took everything I knew as Royalty . And now I'm just a living shadow of that . I feel hands grabbing me the sound catches my ears , and it's girl I don't even know she's crying and asking for help . Just then a black SUV stops , she tries to run away but we are both caught and thrown in the car

It drives off in high speed this girl is busy crying ,
I'm so lost like what's happening ?

.

.

.

INSERT 10

Sky

This is a very awkward moment for her , she's
debating with herself whether to have sex with
me or not

Fucking her was the plan in the beginning , but feelings came in and so I can respect her enough to wait

My phone rings and it saves her she hands it to me and walks into the kitchen

I answer

Me : yeah

Terry : we got the girl

Me : you know what to do

Terry : yeah

I drop the call , I send Africa a text . He might see it or not

Me : babe

I call her out , she comes back

Me : I'm leaving tonight

Asa : Jali

She kills me when she calls me by my surname

Me : I love you and you know that

Asa : must it be tonight ?

Me : the call says so

She nods

Asa : okay , don't forget me when you get there

Me : call me ten times a day , I'll never get
annoyed never mind forgetting you

She clings to me I give her a hug , I love her .
And I'll make this work no matter what

With the task of finding the girls completed , I
can't stick around any more

.

.

Asavela

It was just heart-breaking and sad saying
goodbye to my boyfriend

I don't even feel okay to be on my own , and my
friend is not okay

I think going back home is what's best for both of
us , not her home but my home

I want her to be with me , and her home just isn't
the right place for her right now

It never was but now it'll be just the worst , she's
going through the most

I knock and no one answers , crazy because it's still dark . And she said she's coming back

I unlock and there's no one , I put the light on
take my phone out and call her

It just rings unanswered , and that scares me .
What if Langa hurt her ?

Me : that idiot

I call Sky I'm taking chances because I was there
at the airport seeing him leave

And of course it doesn't go through , now what ?

Me : she'll have to forgive me

I call the cops , Langa will have to say where my friend is at

They say they're coming , so I wait for them . And 30 minutes later they arrive

I explain what happened to her and also why she didn't bother to report it

And of course they don't even take me that serious , but they listen anyways

Offer : so this Langa do you have any idea where we can find him ?

I can ask Sizwe but I'll rather not , that will just piss Sky off I don't need that

Me : I'm not sure , but he's a taxi driver surely a lot of people can know him

Officer : there's too many taxi drivers

Me : and I'm sure there's an only one Langa Zulu taxi driver

He laughs , and I don't get the joke

Officer : you mean Langa Zulu the taxi boss ?

Me : what ?

Officer : you know what let us go to his place and we'll let you know how it goes

They both get up and leave , I'm left defeated .
This is why Royalty thought police are useless

My phone rings and it's Sky I answer it

Sky : was the phone in your hand ?

Me : babe she's gone and I think Langa is
responsible for it , I've called cops they're going
to his place now

He goes quite for a while I hear voices in the
background , but it's not clear at all

Me : babe ?

Sky : I'm sorry , just let me know what the cops say . And if they don't find her with him send me a picture and I'll find her okay

Me : really ?

Sky : anything for you , I know you love your sister

Me : okay babe , call me when you arrive

Sky : I will , I love you

Me : I love you

I hang up , already walking out . I'm going home there's no way I'm sleeping here alone

Langa

She opens the door

Me : I don't want to be disturbed

Thando : police are here for you

She's scared ,I just nod get up and walk out she follows me

I find one officer in our living room

Me : officer

Officer : Mr Zulu

Me : can I help ?

Office : a complaint has been received against you

Me : oh

I can't live with my guilt , I don't even have the strength

Officer : it is believed that about a week ago you molested a young lady by....

Thando : what ?

She shouts

Officer : mam please....

Thando : this is nonsense , my husband is a respectable man with a reputation . What are you trying to do to ?

Officer : Mr Zulu

Me : so are you here to arrest me ?

Officer : the woman is believed to have disappeared

Me : I have nothing to do with her disappearance

Officer : so you're aware of this woman ?

Me : yes

Thando : Langa

I don't even look at her at all

Officer : what do you say to all these accusations?

Me : accusations ?

Officer : that you molested her

Me : I did

I won't deny it , I did and if I have to face consequences then let it be

Thando : Langa , Langa no...no please no....

She cries but not even her cry can break me the same way as Royalty's face

Officer : I believe we'll finish this talk at the station

I don't even fight him and for that reason he doesn't cuff me

Arriving at the station I don't even bother denying anything

I tell them what happened and it's the same thing Asavela told them

I'm put in a holding cell , until the judge gets my case tomorrow

.

.

.

Sky

I called my woman , and she's at home she's not okay of course

I just had my boys make sure that everything that may tie us to Langa is destroyed

We are shitty man yes , but rapists no . We may sell these women but not everything is as it seems

I don't get a man who rapes , this is South Africa you can just buy pussy on the streets . Why take it by force ?

Langa is stupid , and now I hope this doesn't affect my relationship with my woman

That's why I'll try to help find this friend of hers , I don't know her but they're too close

I hoped to meet her before leaving but it didn't happen

Since Africa said not to give Ferrari the girls until he is back , they're kept somewhere else until they can be shipped off

I've come to check on them , before heading home to deal with my shit and see my daughter

I'm welcomed by 16 girls instead of 15 . And I know no one was left here so who is she and what is she doing here ?

Me : Siya

I call out for him , he's the best out of my guys and he was in Joburg for this

Siya : you called

Me : who is she ?

I point to her , and she's completely out of it

Siya : eish

He rubs his head

Me : don't piss me off wena eish yanton ? (for what)

Siya : she got caught by mistake

Me : mistake ?

I turn to him and I have a good mind to snap his

neck or choke the life out of him

Siya : what happened was , as we were getting the last girl she was also there

Me : you get your girl and you leave her , what was so hard about that ?

Siya : the girl was using this one as a hiding shield , it was either we take them both or we loose the one we want . Sky this happened in broad daylight , we couldn't risk being spotted

I shake my head , Africa is going to freak on us

Me : get out of my face

He walks away , I switch off the lights and leave for my home as well

I just take a quick shower put on casual clothes , and head to Tumi's house

I knock she opens the door and just engulfs me in a hug , I return it politely

Me : where's my girl ?

Tumi : sleeping

Me : can I wait up ?

Tumi : of course come in

I walk in we walk to the kitchen

Tumi : good to have you back

Me : been back for a minute

She laughs

Tumi : I missed you

Me : yeah

I sigh

Tumi : what is it ? Didn't you miss me ?

Me : we need to talk

Tumi : you messed around didn't you ?

Tumi sometimes has this thing in her mind that we are a thing , that's more than just being parents

Me : no

Tumi : oh

Me : but I met someone and we are very serious

Her face changes to hurt , but I love Asavela so I won't play her dirty

Tumi : really ?

Me : yes

Tumi : wow , and does she know you have a daughter Sky ?

She raises her voice a bit

Me : she knows everything , even about you and us ..

She nods

Tumi : I see , so where does this leave us ?

Me : we are done , there'll be no more fucking between us . Except being parents to Emihle

Tumi : right

Me : and I hope you don't use Emihle to fight or punish me for this

Tumi : I'm not that petty Sky

She walks out leaving me , I guess to go cry or whatever

.

.

.

Africa

Tyler is the happiest , he's loving being here and it's time I go back to South Africa

I wasn't here to visit anyways and these two are fine on their own

Dad : I wish you can stay a bit longer

Me : dad

Dad : I'm not stopping you to leave either

Me : you can't either way

He laughs

Dad : I'll bring him back myself

Me : saves me a trip and money so it's fine

Dad : your stinginess that's the one thing that says you're not my blood

He walks out I let him be

We met years before Tyler was born I was like 11 or 12 . That's like when my real parents passed away , and it was just one tragic thing

A plane from Botswana to Nigeria was shot down, and unfortunately for me I was in there with them

They didn't survive both of them , but somehow I made it through the plane crash

That's how I met Dante , he also survived the crash . I was just 12 lost with no idea what to do or where to go

But the man had means and he sure used them , managed to get us help and we were able to be rescued

When authorities tried finding out more about who were are where we come from and all that

Dante Oceans just said I'm his son , having seen my parents dead with no idea how I'll get back to Botswana

I agreed , of course I'm not an idiot . I know he must have bribed someone , for the whole thing to be overlooked

The guy is white , I may be light skinned but you can tell I'm back . So that's how I become Africa Oceans , stayed a few years in the US with him

That's how I got into this messed up life , nothing he has nothing to do with . He's clean as they come and legit all the way , he doesn't even approve of my life

But it's mine right and he doesn't get to dictate how I live it

He has no other family besides me , that's why I didn't even bother changing my surname from Oceans to Batlokoa when I came back to Africa and found my family again

.

.

.

Royalty

I try to open my eyes and it's a struggle but I manage to

It's all darkness in here I don't see anything , I close my eyes again

It smells so bad , the floor is cold . I hear sniffs and whispers

It's female voices , so I'm not alone in here . I don't even know where I am

I remember being in Soweto and thrown into a black SUV from there I remember nothing

I don't even know how long I've been in here , clearly we're locked here . I swear I'm cursed , or the heavens hate me . Maybe the universe doesn't like me very much

First I'm raped , by a man I loved . He sure broke me and took everything that I am . That's why I didn't even bother having him arrested , prison in South Africa is like a three star hotel

They get meals three times a day , they shower and now they're given skills to equip themselves
They get to study and become whatever they want to become , they even become pastors huh

Murders and rapists , so what's the point of having someone arrested so he can live and have all those luxuries ?

The scar and pain he caused me is not going anywhere , a few years in jail is nothing compared to what he did to me

Then my messed up family , I think I have a nephew but he's actually my half brother

How messed up is that ? That child doesn't even look like my father . And how can my sister keep quiet about such a thing

Like was it forced or what ? If then forced so we failed her , because we should have been able to see it

To even think they slept together , mutual with agreement is even much more disturbing

And now here I am laying on a cold floor , I could be half away across the world

.

.

.

INSERT 11

Langa

I'm called because I have a visitor , it's been two days kept in here . I don't even see a chance of getting out , I made a confession

I walk in the visitors room , and I wish to turn back . She's the last person I wish to see , not because I hurt her or anything

But because I'm ashamed of my actions , I won't even make excuses and say I don't know what happened

I don't know how it happened , I was all fine and okay . Until I got home and it all hit me what I've done

Thando : are you going to tell me what's going on?

She gets on her feet , I look at her . She's confused and all but mostly she's broken and I'm to blame

Me : don't ever come here again , go on with your life

I will spend my life in prison , or I'll die . It's just those two things I don't see another way for me

Thando : Langa , what happened to my husband because I did not marry a rapist

Those words hit , but truth of the matter is that I did rape Royalty . And she's right she did not marry a rapist , it's best I let her go now . So she doesn't have to live with my sins on her shoulders

Me : I'll have divorce papers signed , just do me a favour and take care of my son

This shocks her , but it's on my mind . It's best I divorce her , I'll leave her with everything so she'll be well taken care of

Me : please take me back

Thando : Langa

I ignore her , and I'm walked back to the cell . I don't ever want to see Thando again , she's just a reminder of what kind of a man I used to be . All this while I'm kept in a cell alone , I know that will soon change and I'll be mixed with other people

I don't even see a point of going to trial because I confessed , all I need is judgement and sentencing

.

.

.

Asavela

My parents are so worried about me , I don't sleep I don't eat . There's absolutely nothing useful I do with my time

I'm just like how can I eat when I don't know if my friend is eating where she is ?

How do I sleep so comfortable in my bed when I don't know where she's sleeping ?

I'm not okay and I don't even want to pretend that I am . Even knowing that Langa admitted the rape charge , it doesn't make it okay nor does it make it better

Dad : you're awake ?

What he means is that I'm in the lounge , I've just been copped up in my room

I guess I can be grateful it's holidays , so I don't have to go anywhere

Mom : I think she should go see a therapist

Dad : for what ?

Mom : does she look okay to you ?

Dad : but we don't know what's going on

Mom : because she's not talking to us , but with a therapist she'll open up

Me : I don't need to open up about anything to anyone

They're busy speaking and talking about me , like I'm not even here

Dad : maybe your mother...

Me : dad please no

He wasn't agreeing and now he wants to change his tune

This issue is not mine it's Royalty's . And she's not here , I will not be laying down on a couch and talking about what happened to her

Me : I'm fine

Mom : you're not fine Asavela , we know you baby

Me : ma please

I plead with them to let this go

Africa

I arrived last night late , I didn't even go anywhere but to my house

I'm woken up by a call from my sister , I don't want to answer . But it could be my girl wanting to rant

Me : hello

Asante : you're asleep at this time ?

She knows I'm long awake by this time

Me : you know what jet lag does to one

Asante : where were you ?

Me : UK , Tyler is visiting his grandfather

Asante : no

She sounds disappointed

Me : what is it ?

Asante : I wanted to come visit

Me : you can still visit

Asante : with my champ not there really ?

Me : I'm here

Asante : I'll think about it

Me : bare in mind I'm your brother and not Tyler

She laughs

Asante : fine , maybe I'll come alone . I wanted to bring the gang around

Me : don't leave Liyana

Asante : but....

Me : if you're not coming with her , don't come to my house

Asante : wow

That's a defeat

Asante : let me leave you to your sleep

Me : I love you

Asante : I love you too

I drop the call , there's no way I can sleep now . I
call Sky

Sky : and he's back

Me : let's meet at the house in two hours

Sky : okay

Me : where are you ?

Sky : at baby mama

Me : wena monna ne ke itha wa jola Joburg (I thought you're dating)

He laughs

Sky : yeah , I'm here to see my daughter

Me : you and Tumi still fucking ?

Sky : no , I cut that off

Me : see you then

Sky : alright , and there's a problem

Me : don't make it mine

I drop the call , I don't need no problems . I just need to see the girls match Ferrari's description

And give him his girls so I can move on to the next thing , it's been one long two months

.

Sky

Tumi is acting up and I have no time nor the energy to entertain her

Tumi : next time please call to say you're coming

I came to spend time with my daughter , and she's just off

Me : since when do I call ?

Tumi : now Sky

I chuckle

Me : aren't you too quick to forget , Emihle is a Jali through and through . I paid damages and lobola for her so don't give me shit , or I'll take her because she's fully mine

She looks down and plays with her fingers

Me : ingathi uzondinyela wena (looks like you want to shit on me)

I grab my keys and walk out , she needs to know I don't love her . And I love who I'm with right now . I get in my car and she calls , we last spoke in the morning and she's not okay at all

I wish she can come here , maybe I should bring her over . But I have an issue with this extra girl What am I going to do with her ? I just can't let her go

I answer the call

Me : babe

Asa : baby , I'm not disturbing

Me : no I just came to see Emihle I'm going to my place now

Asa : and is she well ?

Me : she is great my love

Asa : that's good

Me : yes , but I want both my girls to be well

She sighs

Me : talk to me

Asa : Langa is arrested , he admitted

I already know that , there's nothing I don't know.
And we can't even help Langa out . On Africa's
orders , we don't rape and that's that. He did
exactly the opposite of what we don't do

Me : that's good right ?

No ways , if this was done to someone I care
about . Langa would spend the rest of his life in
torture . Jail or prison is useless , it doesn't even
serve as justice to me at all

Asa : is it babe ?

No it's not

Me : I know it's not much

Asa : it's no punishment to the perpetrator nor justice to the victim

She's right about that , that's why I wouldn't have had him arrested to begin with

Asa : even though he admitted everything , he still denies having anything to do with her disappearance

Me : babe send that picture

Asa : okay let me do it now

Me : okay I love you right

Asa : I love you too babe

We hang up , the message comes through . And
I'm no idiot , even though she was on the floor
and all this is her

Me : how the fuck did this happen ?

I look at the time , I have to go to the house . I
hope Africa doesn't have my head

.

.

.

Royalty

The steel gate makes noise , like someone is
hitting the gate with something

The lights come on , and blind my eyes . We've
been in the dark for days now I'm sure

Light is something that's foreign now , we're not
even given water . Just dry bread once a day

Some human beings are heartless to the core ,
and that's the monsters that have us locked in
here

The other girls crawl to corners , they're crying .
I'm just blank it's like I'm lost , and having trouble
adjusting to this reality

Three men appear and the way they look so good , you'd never think they're monsters who kidnap girls

The two stand back as the one with dreadlocks comes forward , he looks around . My eyes are not leaving them

After a while he nods and goes back , all this is making me wonder

Was I a target ? Or the girl was and I just got caught with her ?

If that the case then that's just pure bad luck

.

.

.

Africa

I turn to walk back but her eyes catch my eyes , I look at her . Her eyes don't leave mine , for a while we look at each other . She doesn't dare look down or away

Me : who is that ?

Sky walks closer and looks at her , his facial expression doesn't please me at all

Sky : the guys came into a problem and it was her

Me : I said don't make your problems mine

Sky : I understand

Me : so what does she want here ?

Sky : I thought ...

Me : I didn't give you any task to thought

Sky : I couldn't just let her go

Me : and you brought me a stray

I look at her again and back at him

Me : fix this shit , none of my guys would have done such a messy job

His guys messed up and he knows it

Sky : what will I do with her ? I just found out she's someone that's needed

Me : do I look like I give a shit , she saw me so kill her

He goes quite

Me : will that be a problem ?

Sky : no but

Me : the but scratches the no so kill her

He's really conflicted meaning he's not telling me something

Me : Sky

Sky : okay she's friends with my girlfriend , I didn't know that okay. Until she sent me her picture because I offered to look for her

Me : I don't care

Sky : you still want me to kill her ?

I stare at him

Sky : well you kill her yourself

I draw my gun out

.

.

.

INSERT 12

Africa

Sky gives me a scared look for her and I fire a shot , the other girls scream some even cry

He's too quick to look inside

Sky : you don't miss

I turn slowly and look at her , she's bleeding . It's not a wound nothing to cry about

Just a small gaze to her ear

Me : I never miss

He release a sigh of relief

Sky : let me take her back

Me : I just told you she saw me

There's no way she can go back to Joburg , and live her life like none of this ever happened

Sky : my girlfriend is really worried about her

Me : that's her worry and not mine , she's not going back

Sky : what to do with her ? I can try and find a buyer

Me : go in take her out

He takes the keys and open the door , he brings her out

I know a broken soul when I see one , and she's it . One look at her and she was ready to die

She didn't even care , she was more like begging for it . When that bullet grazed her ear , she didn't even flinch

Sky : now what ?

Me : call Ferrari , finalize the initial end plan for the girls when they arrive there

Sky : okay , and her ?

Me : nothing , tell your girlfriend you failed

He sighs I don't care about his feels right now

.

.

.

Royalty

The whole ride I'm so scared , I thought I was scared when Langa was violating me

But that experience doesn't even come any closer to this one , this man scares me by just looking at him . It's not even about that bullet he missed me with , and I can safely say that was deliberate

If he wanted to kill me he would have , he just spared my life and for what I don't know

I don't even know where this is , but I know it's not Joburg . If it was i would have already noticed something familiar

We arrive at this place , it looks like a private estate . Security at the gate is crazy . The drive

way is about 5 minutes maybe , before the house appears

And for a guy who looks like he has money , and I'm sure he's making tons and lots of it by selling these women . He's not flaunting it , yes to a poor person like me this house is all . But in all honesty it's just a normal big double storey

We get off the car and I'm like a puppy just following behind him , we walk inside

Him : you'll live like the human being you are , eat bath and do whatever you want to do . There's no escaping here , so try that shit and I'll kill you . Forget everything and everyone you know , this is your reality now . Second door down the corridor , you'll use that room

He walks away from me , I see the corridor and I
just walk on it and see the room

I walk inside and it's fine for me , I just walk into
the bathroom and take a shower

I don't feel normal right now , it's like I'm shutting
down reality and living in denial

This is not normal at all , I should be breaking
down . But here I am showering , even after what
I've just been told

.

.

.

Sky

Africa has just put me in a corner , I don't know how I'll say to Asavela I failed finding her friend just like that

I can tell her truth , but that means I'm losing her . No ways she's going to stand me after I tell her the truth

I don't know what I'm going to do , and worse I don't even know where he took her or what he plans to do with her

This is fucking messed up , Asavela cannot find out what I do . And she cannot find out I know what happened to her friend

The door opens and Tumi walks in , in nothing but just a coat

Why the fuck did I not lock ? She takes it off and she fucking has nothing underneath . She's completely naked , I watch her as she straddles me

Me : the fuck you doing ?

Tumi : shhhhh

She smashes her lips on mine

Me : Tumi stop

Tumi : don't talk , just fuck me

A few minutes I return the kiss , she takes my t-shirt off

Me : stop

Tumi : you won't deny me Sky , it's just sex

Me : we can't

Tumi : come on , one last goodbye

Me : don't

She unbuckles my pants and my dick is so hard

Tumi : let me

She takes it inside of her nuna

Tumi : Ohhhh my god , fuck I missed you

She wastes no time ridding me deeper , it's fucking hitting the spot . I hold her waist and thrust in underneath of her , she cups my face takes my lips into hers

We kiss as we fuck , I slap her ass cheeks she picks up her pace ridding me faster

I meet her pace with my thrusts , she clings to me as she cums .

Tumi : ahhhhh shit

She screams out , don't let go I hold her down
going in deeper and I cum

Fuck she'll need a pill , I wasn't even protected .
We can't have any more kids , we shouldn't even
have fucked

Tumi : tell me that was wrong

She's just pushing my buttons

Tumi : you wanted it as much as I do

Me : I haven't had sex since I left for Joburg , but
it's no excuse . Anyways my dick was hard and I
needed to release you offered yourself

She slaps me and gets off me , wearing her coat

Tumi : you're such a dick

Me : and you fucking just enjoyed it

She clicks her tongue and walks out . On top of a mess up I've just caused another one , I need to come clean

Africa

I walk in the room and she's on the bed sleeping in just a towel

Her thighs are exposed , this is just temptation in my house

I put the clothes on the bed rest , cover her with a throw and walk out closing the door

I walk in the kitchen and Walter is about to knock off its way too late he should be gone by now

Me : Walter

Walter : Mr Oceans

Me : please prepare a light meal , call me when it's done

Walter : alright sir

I walk out leaving him to his work , I walk to my office . My phone rings and it's Ferrari I answer.

Me : yes

Leo : deadline Oceans

Me : I never miss , don't ever do this fucking mistake of calling me as if I'm incompetent .

Leo : I was....

Me : don't ever call me , we're not friends

I drop the call , a knock comes at the door and it's Walter

Walter : the meal is done Mr Oceans

That was quick

Me : thank you Walter

Walter : I shall take my leave

Me : of course

He walks out , I call Jayden and for once he answers

Jay : Mr Africa Oceans

He says laughing

Me : I need you to do me a favour

Jay : anything for you , excuse the pun

I chuckle

Me : I need you to find information about
someone anything and everything you can find

Jay : me again , into these things of yours

Me : just do it and get back to me

Jay : okay send me something

Me : alright

I drop the call walk to the kitchen and indeed
Walter is done with the food , it's even plated

I take the plate into her room , she's look drained
and tired . I'll just leave it here so she can eat
when she wakes up

I can't have a woman in my house I don't even
know , the last time I let a woman into my house
She messed me up , and in return I killed her .
Now I'd hate to kill this one

.

.

.

Asavela

I'm still not giving up hope , I believe she will be found and she'll be okay

Sky hasn't said anything , I don't even know how he'll try to find her but I appreciate the effort to even try . Maybe my mother was right , I should go see a therapist . I feel like I'm losing my mind, like in going crazy

I don't know how to go on , it's all too much . I miss my friend I want her back home safe and sound

But at this rate it seems like that won't happen anytime soon , I don't want to think and imagine the worst but it's just hard not to

Mom : thank you for joining us

I nod , I'm losing so much weight . Because I'm not eating , I really just can't

Dad : please have something to eat

I take a bowl and dish up just fruit salad

Mom : Royalty not being around , does that have anything to do with her family dilemma ?

Me : what dilemma ?

I remember she said something about something going on at her home

And she said she'll tell me when she gets back ,
but she never came back

Mom : that her sisters child is her father's

Me : what ?

Dad : those are just rumours , can we not spread
them

Mom : it's not spreading , people were there and
they heard with their own ears

Dad : we weren't there so let's not

Me : wait , what are you saying ma ?

Mom : her nephew is her half brother

What taboo is this ?

Me : Mr Mofokeng was raping his daughter ?

Dad : Asavela

He reprimands but I need to understand , how does a father have a child with his own daughter

Mom : no , seems like it was consensual and mutual

Me : ma

I don't know like I really don't know , no wonder my friend is gone now . All this was just too much

for her , but can it be there no one took her and she just left on her own ?

To get away from away from all this drama , if it is so then I have no chance of finding her unless she decides to come back

That's if she does want to come back , I should just tell Sky to stop . This place is toxic for her , and maybe she's better off without it

.

.

.

INSERT 13

Royalty

I wake up and look around , and now reality sure hits . I'm kidnapped , and with the possibility of never going back home

I'm not going to cry and whine about it now , it's no use and maybe I'm better off here

There were no threats made , well except that killing part . But even I doubt I want to run away

And this place may be simple but it looks like a fortress , I can't possibly escape here even if I try. The only sad thing about this whole thing is my degree , two year of varsity and it all ends like this ?

That degree was the only thing , that was going
to make me a someone and now it's all gone

A plate is covered on the night stand , and I'm
hungry but I don't eat cold food

Crazy I know but that's just me , I get up and the
plastic of clothes falls

Me : how nice ?

See my kidnapper brought me clothes , right after
he gazed my ear with a bullet

And I just wanted to die right there and there . I
go take a shower dry and lotion

I put on a black short sleeve vest and a blue bum short

I'll be judged , I got raped however long ago and here I am dressed like this

But a rapist is a rapist , short revealing clothes or not . A 65 year old grandmother gets raped inside her house , wearing a two long skirts do we still blame clothes ?

A 7 months year old get raped do we blame the pampers or nappy ? Langa knew what he was doing and he wanted to do it , rape has nothing to do with dress code

People need to stop justifying nonsense , I walk out barefoot with the plate . Hopefully I can find a microwave or food warmer so I can eat

I'm welcomed by my dreadlocks kidnapper and a cute white guy , he looks like some a chef

Me : is there anywhere I can warm this ?

I point to the plate , I'll be so comfortable as I can. Remember I'm told to do whatever I want , just not try to escape

Him : don't you know how to greet ?

Me : I'm very grumpy when I'm hungry

He gives me a death stare I smile , he intimidates me to the core . But he's never going to know or see that

The chiefs chuckles

Him : mam let me help you with that

Me : thank you , you're so kind and my name is Royalty not mam

He laughs I hand him the plate

Him : Walter

Me : you're very nice Walter

I look at my kidnapper , he shakes his head and gets up , looks like he's going out

Me : what will I be doing the whole day ?

He turns and looks at me

Me : I'll be bored honestly

He says nothing and walks out , just great . He's some kind of a robot

Walter : Royalty here you go , and please hold back on the early conversations . Mr Oceans is not a morning

Mr Oceans , a black man with a white surname .
So that's really a thing , black people have white surnames

Me : thank you

He smiles , I take the plate and walk into the lounge . Cartoons are the best therapy

Africa

I'm so annoyed , seems like I invited myself a monger

Jayden walks in amused , I'm sure he has finally gotten the receptionist number

Me : tell me nothing that doesn't concern me

He laughs

Jay : Royalty Mofokeng 23 years old originally from free state , both parents still alive . Has a younger sister and nephew , second year student at Wits university going pharmaceutical . No psycho boyfriends , except Langa Zulu

Me : when was that ?

Jay : recent

She doesn't strike me like the type that would date married men

Jay : no scandals no skeletons nothing she's clean

Me : okay , now leave

Jay : I didn't even sit down

Me : I don't pay you to

Jay : damn we need less man like yourself

He says walking out , I could have him find out exactly what happened between her and Langa

He's in jail now awaiting to be sentenced for rape , I'd hate for anyone else to know if it involves her

Me : why do I care ?

I don't even know why she's in my house

.

.

.

Asavela

I walk out just to answer his call , my parents are all over my business .

Me : babe

Sky : baby , how are you ?

He sounds do down , I feel like something is wrong with him

Me : I'm okay but you're not

He sighs

Me : you haven't found her ?

Sky : no.... I haven't

Me : okay then you can stop

Sky : why ?

I feel so bad saying this but I have a feeling she left on her own , I just don't understand why not tell me at least

Me : I think she left on her own

Sky : what ?

Me : yeah , there's word going around the township regarding her family . She found out the news same day she went missing , I think it all became too much for her and she left

Sky : oh okay , if you feel I should stop then it's fine babe

Me : thank you for trying anyway

Sky : yeah

Me : babe what's wrong ?

Sky : please don't hate me too much

Me : what did you do ?

He goes quite

Me : babe ?

Sky : eish , Tumi came here and...

Me : who's that ?

Sky : Emihle's mother

This is not good at all

Me : and you slept with her ?

Sky : yes

Now I'm the quite one

Sky : babe I am sorry for being a weakling of a man and not being able to resist temptation I am really sorry i...

Me : do you still love her Sky ?

I'm hurt I even feel like crying , I know we never sleeper together and all

He's a man he was probably horny and all , but then again he has a girlfriend

Sky : I don't love her beyond being the mother of my child

Me : I can never compete with a woman you share such a strong bond with , so please don't even try to make feel so belittled

Sky : babe that's

Me : right now you've just made me wonder if you and her will ever be done with your fucking business .

Sky : we are done

Me : that's what you said last night , and a week back in Cape Town your dick lands inside her pussy !

Sky : okay I get you're upset , but can we watch that tone

Me : Sky if I'm not good enough for you leave me now , I won't be worried at the back of my head always because my boyfriend can't resist his baby mama

Sky : I said...

I drop the call on him , he calls back I switch it off. This one on one relationships are too much

work . I never had any of these worries and issues with my married men relationships

This is what I don't want , to always cry and feel sad and feel all these betrayal emotions

Africa

Asante is not happy with me , she's supposed to visit with Liyana . But with having Royalty in my house I can't have them come

Asante : are you serious ?

I'm on call with her

Me : yeah , look I'm swamped with work

She laughs

Asante : Africa you don't work

She loves mocking me with this , I don't even hold a varsity qualification . I left school in grade 11 . I don't even regret it nor am I even ashamed about it

Me : I work

Asante : you have some fancy office , you sit behind a desk no one even knows what your company is called and what it does

Who would know ? I mean I don't even bother to name the company . It's not even legal , and there's nowhere you'll find it . It's not on record

Me : by no one you mean you right ?

Asante : everyone

Me : whatever , but on a serious note you can't come

Asante : good thing u didn't tell Liyana , you sure break hearts

Me : I'm sorry

Asante : no you're not , first you take my nephew halfway across the world . Now you're denying me the chance to come see you

Me : how about I come see you ?

Asante : no don't
Siblings are the worst kind

Me : okay fine

Asante : I hate you sham

She drops the call on me , I was supposed to beg her until she agrees that I go visit . But now ways, something tells me to stick around for Royalty I hope I'm not becoming Tyler

.

.

.

INSERT 14

Sky

I didn't sleep a wink , worried sick about how my baby ended that call yesterday

First thing morning , I'm in Joburg at her apartment and I know she's not around . I called the phone is still on voicemail , I know she switched it off on purpose

I understand her anger perfectly , and I'm the one who messed up . So I put my manly ego aside and fix things

I wait around the apartment for a few hours ,
hoping she can open her phone but nothing

I drive to Soweto , Africa doesn't even know I left
because I didn't tell him

But knowing him , he knows everything and
there's nothing he doesn't know unless he
doesn't want to

So surely he already knows that I left , but the
plan is to fly back later on . Or maybe tomorrow

I park outside her home , and they have those
brick walls (stop nonsense)

I call again and still no luck , I'm not leaving until I talk her . I get off the car and walk inside the yard

The gate is not locked I knock at the door , for a while no one opens the door . Until she opens it , and she just pushes me off I almost fall on the step

Me : babe why the violence ?

She closes the door and takes my hand , if she had her way she'll be dragging me out

We walk outside the gate to my car and we get in

Me : what was that for ?

She looks at me annoyed

Asa : drive and go far from my parents house

My baby is fuming , but I listen and drive to the park

Asa : what are you doing knocking at my parents house ?

Me : should I have just walked in ?

Asa : this is not a joke Sky

Me : yeah well you're ignoring me , I'm not okay .
Babe we need to fix this , I'm sorry okay

Asa : you didn't have to come all the way from Cape town to tell me this

Me : babe listen , I know I wronged you and I admit . But I've found the most beautiful thing in you , I don't want to lose it

Asa : you hurt me

Me : I know , I know and which is why I'm here

I take her hands into mine

Me : I'm so sorry , I felt so bad and fucking hated myself . That's why I even told you

And now I feel worse for hiding the truth about her friend

But where Africa is involved , it's not that easy . I might even be putting my baby in harm's way

Me : I won't ever do that shit again

Asa : I don't want to compete for you

I've hurt her and I hate seeing her cry , knowing it's my fault is even much worse

I bring her closer and that causes her to cry even more

Me : I'm sorry , I won't do it again

Asa : you're my first boyfriend , please don't make this experience bad and sour for me

I'll get my act together , and stop doing shit . So she doesn't get ideas to go back to dating married man

She's better off with me now , her boyfriend surely that feels and sounds good

.

.

.

Langa

Thando is refusing to sign the divorce papers , I don't want to force her

I just thought I'm doing her a favour , so she can go on with her life . Find love if she can

I don't want to hold her back , I love my wife so much . But the love I held for Royalty as well I didn't want to let go of that , and look where it got me .

I saw the judge today and I'm sentenced to 25 with the possibility of parole after 15 years

That's a long time , either one of us can even die during the years

I call her , the one last chance of a phone call I have before I'm taken to sun city

Thando : hello ?

Me : it's me , how are you ?

Thando : you served me divorce papers really
Langa

Me : I messed up , you don't deserve to be caught up in any of this

Thando : whether we divorce or not , how do you think I feel ? Langa you raped

Me : I know that , and I'm going to prison for my actions .

Thando : what ?

She's crying

Thando : without a lawyer or a trial ?

Me : I confessed there's no need for any of that ,
I got 25 years I can apply for parole after 15
years

She wails , and my time is running out

Thando : I hate you for taking my son's father
away from him

Officer : times up

He just drags me and the phone drops

Me : don't fucking put your hands on me like that
ever again , I'll make you regret it

He moves back and let's go , I hold my hands so
he can cuff them . My feet are already cuffed

I fucking feel like a damn prisoner

.

.

.

Asavela

Sky spent the night , we were at my apartment
and I thought he'll initiate sex

But nothing , and I didn't even want to start him
on it

But he explained this morning before he left , that
he loves me and he's willing to wait

He messed up and I don't have to feel some king
of pressure to have sex with him

Because of a fear that he'll cheat or sleep with
Tumi again

I want to trust my boyfriend , and in willing to work on us . I appreciate the honesty

I won't always accept just because he was honest , but I think I can let this go this time around

Mom : where were you ?

That's the greeting that welcomes me

Me : with friends

Mom : you're back to your old ways again ?

They don't know I have an apartment , and I have no desire to tell them

Me : no ma , it was all innocent . And I don't know what do you mean by old ways

Mom : for two weeks you've been staying at home

Me : it was just last night , it won't happen again
I'm lying , I'm just waiting for my man to summon me to Cape town I'll run

.

.

.

Africa

Tyler will be coming back in a few days , I don't know how he's going to feel

Finding a woman in his father's house , he's never seen that before . And I never thought he'll see that any time soon or even ever

Love makes people act foolish , look how Sky ran to Joburg all because of a woman

Me : is everything done ?

Sky : yeah , the guys are all ready and waiting

Me : and Ferrari ?

Sky : he's expecting them in just a day

Me : let the guys know , to take as many as they can

Sky : I have enough guys this time around , we won't let you down

Me : we ?

He laughs

Sky : they , but since I found them I can include myself

Me : stop being stupid , and get out of my sight .
You look awful

Sky : I didn't sleep

Me : get out of my sight Sky

He gets up

Sky : one last thing , where is she ?

Me : leave

Sky : you're....

Me : I don't care about your feels , keep me out of them

He leaves and just because he mentioned her , now I want to go home and just watch over her

She's not okay , whatever happened to her is now eating at her . She's always in her room

No longer annoys me with her talks , it's like she's not even there . But I crave for her presence always , I watch over her at night she doesn't even know that

I don't sleep , only in the early hours of the morning I go to my room . She has had nightmares , she's always screaming and crying begging

But I can never make out what she's saying , I'm sure it has to do with whatever happened to her . I could just find out on my own , but something tells me not to

.

.

.

Royalty

Today I managed to get up and bath , spent the day outside

I don't know how I'm feeling as of late , if I hate myself or my life

Or if I hate just life in general , or I just hate everything

But I see no need to live anymore , I really don't . I thought I'm okay , that I knew myself and that I can overcome anything

But I guess I lied to myself , it was all just too much at the same time . I hate and despise everything as of late , that I don't even look at myself in the mirror

I feel so dirty and worthless , I feel like just damaged goods . How I thought I'll go one and be fine puzzles me

Walter : here you go

He puts on a saucer of chocolate cake in front of me

Me : thank you Walter

He smiles and in walks thee Mr Oceans . I'm scared of this man , and that's another thing I can't avoid

I was crazy to think I'll live fine here , at the end of the day I'm still being kept without my consent.

I get up to walk out , with my cake I'm not leaving it because I want it

Him : where are you going ?

I still don't know his name , besides knowing his surname . I try to walk past him he holds my hand , and I shiver just at that dropping the saucer in my hand. I go down to pick it up

Walter : please leave it

He says to me

Him : Walter please excuse us

Walter walks out , he tries to hold my hand again
I move it

Him : why are you avoiding me ? Did I do something to make you uncomfortable ?

No he didn't

Me : you're keeping me against my will

He moves back and his face changes

Him : well forget , because you're not going anywhere

He walks away , I just break down and cry . Why I don't know

Maybe it's because of what happened with
Langa, or my reality is hitting me

.

.

Africa

Her cries pierce through my room , it takes
everything in me not to go back in there and hug
her

It takes 3 glasses of scotch to calm me down ,
and she has stopped crying as well

I take 2 headache tablets and water to her room ,
she's already in bed

Me : here drink that

She just looks at the glass and pills

Me : I'm not drugging you , if I want to hurt you I'll do it while you're sober minded and sane . I'm not fucking coward

She sits up and takes the pills , I walk out standing by the door . Soon they'll knock her out I know

I wait for a few minutes before walking back in , and she's asleep

I take the chair and sit down watching over her , it's my daily routine

I wish I can do just more than watch her , but
after today I'm sure she was violated

And a man's touch now scares her , now how will
I pull her closer to me . Even if I want to , it'll take
a miracle for her to open up and trust me

.

.

.

INSERT 15

Africa

The persistent knock gets me out of my office ,
Royalty is cooped up in her room

I decided to stay home and just be with her ,
even if I won't get to see her much

I open the door and I'm welcomed by a fist pump,
and he just walks past me

Me : where did you leave your manners ?

Tyler : daddy I'm tired

Dad : let the kid be

Me : you're ruining Jim

Dad : I ruined you just fine

This old man has no pun whatsoever

Me : I wasn't expecting you today

Dad : why were you expecting us to begin with ?

Me : dad....

His eyes trail to the kitchen door , Royalty walks in from there . I didn't even know she was in there

Dad : oh now I see it

I sigh , he walks closer to her

Dad : Dante Oceans his father and you are ?

He holds his hand out for a handshake

Me : don't do...

She accepts the gesture , and here I was thinking that she'll have an episode

Royalty : Royalty

Dad : beautiful name

He says with a smile , she returns it

Tyler : hi , I'm Tyler

She looks at him

Royalty : can I call you Ty ?

He smiles and nods

Tyler : daddy also calls me Ty , but only when he's having serious talks with me . Other than that I'm just young champ

She laughs , and it's the most beautiful amazing melodic sound I've ever heard

Royalty : how old are you ?

Tyler : I'm 6

Royalty : you young man are very smart

Tyler : well thank you

Now awkwardness , and I can feel my father has
crazy questions prepared

Me : young champ go get a drink

Tyler : daddy

Me : Ty just go

He gets off the couch

Royalty : I'll go with you

They walk back into the kitchen

Dad : since when do you bring your fuck buddies in your house ?

Me : she's not

Dad : so you have a girlfriend ?

Me : I don't

Dad : then who is she ?

Me : I'm not Tyler , don't put me under a 3rd degree

Dad : you're still a child to me

Me : yeah okay , but stop . And when are you leaving ?

Dad : I just got here , I'll stay maybe a week

Hell no

Me : just a day okay

He laughs walking into the kitchen , and it's all laughter in there

I'm even jealous , she doesn't laugh with me .
But she's busy entertaining Tyler

Royalty

This boy is the cutest ever and he's got the charm . And the smooth words , I feel sorry for the girls

He kept me entertained all day , along with his grandfather . That man has way too many stories to tell , I doubt half of them are even true

But it was nice and amazing to have people keeping me company

Now it's late and he's tired you can tell that he's tired , I'm also tired

Africa : Ty time for bed

Tyler told me his father's name and I just think it's powerful , it besides just being the most continent with all kinds of minerals and all

I just think it's a powerful name all on its own , and it's fitting for the owner in this case

Tyler : okay

He gets off the couch

Tyler : Royalty goodnight

Me : goodnight boy

He smiles , his father takes his hand

Tyler : will you be here tomorrow ?

Me : yes and the day after that everyday

Tyler : good

He gives me a kiss on the cheek , it's so romantic. They walk away

I wish night never comes , I hardly sleep . I'm having bad dreams about Langa

It's not even about me but it's about him , it's like he's haunting me or something

And I don't know why , in some dreams it's like
he's in dark deep hole , and he keeps going
down and down

The hole is just swallowing him , he can't get out.
And no one can help him get out . They try but
fail , in a way I feel I can be able to help him

But I don't want to , I wish I didn't have to sleep .
But there's nothing I can do to stay awake all
night

Eventually I sleep and the dreams comes , in the
morning I wake up with my body so tirest and it's
like I was in a fight

.

.

Africa

She's at it again screaming and crying , and tonight I'm in my room . I can't sleep because I'm in here and I wish I can be in there with her , I know I don't do much but it's better than being in here

A rough knock comes at the door , and I know it's my son . The hand is tiny

Tyler : daddy open up

He's crying , I get off the bed and open the door . He just holds my legs

Tyler : go help Royalty , she's not okay daddy
please go help her

Dad : what's going on ?

Me : please take him

He nods and takes him walking to his room , I
walk to her room

She's in a battled , her body says so . I walk to
the bed and sit down . I fight with myself to hold
her , what if I scare her worse . But for my son ,
I'll try

I shake her slightly it takes a while before she
opens her eyes , and tears stream down her face

I pull her closer to me , and she sobs so painfully

Royalty : he hurt me and now he wants me to help him

I don't know this him but I fucking hate him

Me : it's just a nightmare

I let her cry , until the cries die down . I pick her up into my arms , and walk into my room . I put her in her bed and get in as well . I snuggle her closer to me , she lets me cuddle her . It's a while before she falls asleep again

Me : it's okay , you're safe here and no one will ever hurt you again

I have a good mind to make whoever hurt her
pay , and soon enough she will tell me

.

.

.

Sky

I'm taking Emihle for the weekend , I don't know
if it's a good idea or what especially because
Asavela is coming over . I already booked her
flight for later today , she has school next week

I'll rather spend this weekend with her , and
hopefully I can gain her trust again . And I want
her to meet my daughter , it might be too soon for

that . But I'm in this for the long run , I'm not planning to play games with her at all

Emihle : tata (daddy)

Me : ndimamele (I'm listening)

Emihle : ambile (I'm hungry)

I love my daughter to bits , but she's too much work even for me

I applaud her mother , for taking care of her everyday and never complains about it

I make her food , and thinking she's some big girl she wants to feed herself so I let her be

My phone rings , it's the other woman who owns
my heart I answer

Me : baby

Asa : are you for real ?

She's so excited

Me : about ?

Asa : come on , the plane ticket it's for real ?

Me : I'm for real as well

She screams , I put the phone away from my ear
until she's done

Asa : I love you , and I need shopping

Women and drama

Me : I can't wait to see

Asa : me too , be at the airport and don't be late .
I don't want to get lost

I laugh , I've never heard her this happy and
excited

Me : I won't my baby

Asa : okay I love you

Me : and I love you

Emihle : ove you (love you)

We laugh

Asa : is that the little miss ?

Me : yes

Asa : she's so cute

Me : don't get ideas

She laughs

Asa : until a ring is on it , there'll be no siblings

Me : damn

Asa : yeah bye

She drops the call , I'm sure I have the stupidest smile ever . I send her money , even though she did not ask . But she said shopping

.

.

.

Royalty

This is not the room I use , the presence in here it's too dark . And these sheets , they feel so

different . His masculine scent is all over them sheets , and I'm in his arms . Like literally in his arms

I have fuzzy memories as to how I got in here , but I know it wasn't by force

I want to get up and go pee , but I'm so embarrassed and so ashamed

I just don't want to look at him , how will I look at him ? We don't even greet each other

And now we are in bed together , talk about some change .

But I'm so pressed , I move and he moves his arms off of me . I get off the bed not looking at him

But the second I'm off him , I feel so cold and incomplete . I want to get back in bed and have him cuddle me again

Me : thank you

I say not even looking at him , and I don't know why I'm saying thank you

I walk out and I'm met by Tyler , right at the door of my room

Me : hey you

He just throws himself on me , and he's so heavy but I pick him up anyway

Tyler : I thought you left

Me : I told you I'm not going anywhere

Tyler : you scared me last night , I also cried

I have no idea what he's talking about but he's making me sad

Me : I'm sorry okay

He nods

Tyler : I'm glad daddy made you feel better

Me : me and you both boy

This is awkward , he's just a baby and I don't want to confuse him with my confusion

.

.

.

INSERT 16

Asavela

I don't know what's scaring me , coming here or having to meet the daughter

What if she doesn't like me , the child has he mother . And surely she knows only her mother

Now I'll be like the other woman in her father's life , it'll be a challenge if Emihle doesn't like me

I walk out and it's not long until I spot him , I want to run to him . But this is Sky

He might just tell me I came to him with , movies and tv nonsense . I compose myself

Me : baby

He looks at me and smiles , I just snuggle closer to him for a hug

Sky : look at you , all behaving

I laugh

Sky : I thought you'll come out of here running ,
and screaming

Me : I wanted to run , but then I'm dating you
right

He laughs

Sky : I'm not that bad babe

Me : right , baby just look at yourself from my
perspective

Sky : I see nothing

Me : wow

He takes my hand and takes my bag , we walk out to the parking lot

Sky : are you good ?

Me : I think I am

Sky : what's scaring you ?

Me : meeting your daughter

He smiles

Sky : a 3 year old shouldn't scare you at all

Me : babies are scary

Sky : don't be scared

We arrive to his car , and the baby is sleeping alone in the car

Me : you left her alone ?

This is careless

Sky : don't bite my head off , there's people watching her

I look around and I don't see any people

Sky : you won't see them , but they're around so trust me

I don't know about that , we get into the car . He drives to the West Coast in Phoenix

His place is insane , twice nice and better than the house in Joburg

Now I understand why he doesn't live there , and if you knew his house you'd know the one in Joburg is not his style

Sky : let me go put her to bed , I guess you'll meet each other in the morning

Me : okay babe

I look around a bit , it's a black people thing . We
can't help nor control our eyes

.

.

.

Royalty

I finish tucking him in bed , we spent the day
together and it was just amazing

It's official I love this little person , he makes me
forget all this I'm going through

When I'm with him I smile and laugh , and it's all
genuine . Nothing about it is even forced

Me : goodnight my love

I give him a kiss on the forehead

Tyler : I love you

I've never seen nor met such a sweet person

Me : I love you

He smiles and covers himself , I walk out heading to my room

Africa : where are you going ?

He stops me on my tracks right at the door

Me : I'm...going to...sleep

Africa : my room is that way

Is he for real ? Whoa he wants me to go sleep in his room again

I don't know what to say , do I want to go sleep in there ? It was nice I won't lie , but I thought he was just helping me last night

Africa : okay well , your choice stand there all night or go to bed

He walks away , I need to sleep and I could do with a nice peaceful sleep

I get in my room and change into PJ's then go to his room , and he's not in

I get in bed , the sheets are so cold . I can't fall asleep at all , I toss and turn

Until a while later I feel the bed going down and it's him , he brings me closer to him . And somehow I feel safe , in the hands of the same man who has kept me in his house against my will

I should be scared of him at the end of the day , he's still a man . But something tells me he won't hurt me in that way

I don't know what makes me have that stupid thought , because this man kidnaps girls

And I'm sure he traffic's them , I would have bee
one of them . I have a feeling they just took me
by mistake

Maybe that's why I'm here in his house , and he
did not kill me

Being so close to him , and in his arms feels
right. But I know better now and there's no way
he even wants me

Africa

It's middle of the night , she's having these
nightmares of hers . I watch over her , unto she
opens her eyes and she screams . But I'm quick

to muffle her . I don't want Tyler waking up again, she just clings and holds tight to me crying

I hold her not saying anything , I will not ask until she tells me . I don't want to get infuriated , from my own emotions . After a while she calms down and falls back to sleep , for a few left hours I get some shut eye as well

Morning I'm woken up by her , trying to get off of me . And I don't want her to go , but I don't want to scare her

Me : must you always run away in the morning ?

Royalty : I'm ...not running away

Me : then where are you going ?

Royalty : I...I need to pee

She whispers that

Me : I have a bathroom in here

Royalty : okay

I let her go , and she disappears in the bathroom for almost an hour . The running water in the shower tells me she's showering

Me : and here I was thinking she just needs to pee

She comes out in my towel , no ways I look at her and I feel nothing .

Royalty : thank you for letting me sleep in here

She walks out leaving me in bed . I'm going to the office today , staying here will drive me crazy

.

.

.

.

Asavela

I'm woken up by breakfast in bed , I hope I get to take care of my man before I leave

Me : thank you baby , breakfast was amazing

He gives me a kiss and I return it , I wouldn't mind to even have him now . But there's a child in this house

Me : don't tempt me

He laughs , pushing me back down . I part my legs to accommodate him

Sky : I'm tempted

Me : we have a child in the house

We laugh

Sky : I know

Me : are quickies allowed ?

Sky : for first time ? No ways I'll die

I smile

Me : well then you've have to wait

Sky : but I can't

He takes the sheets and cover is , while he takes his briefs off . He already has no shirt on

He takes his shirt that I'm wearing off , slides my panties to the side

Sky : it doesn't count

He moves up stares into my eyes , I return the gesture

I feel his dick penetrating through my poor nuna , I want to cry but there's a child in this house . It damn counts , with such a huge dick inside of me. Like I feel it , it's like it's poking my stomach

Sky is gifted I have never had such a huge dick before , thank god I'm not a virgin or else I'll be crying right now . It's hard taking him in , I feel like I'll break my legs trying to accommodate him

Sky : relax your body

You hear such words on your first time as a virgin, he's just made me feel like that yet I can't even be happy

He's tearing me apart , after this I doubt I'll want another man inside of me except him

He starts thrusting in slowly , I feel so much pain and it's accompanied by a bit of pleasure . It's going to take a while for me to adjust and get used to him

He groans and it makes me too horny , there's nothing sexy like groans of a man during sex

I start moaning slowly , he takes my lips into his . Cleary so that I don't make noise

Small people are respected , they'll make you have silent sex like old people

It's not long I reach my orgasms it takes him a few deep thrusts before he cums . Thank god for the pill , I'm not giving no man any kids anytime soon . And his daughter is still young

We kiss for a few minutes , I remember he's still inside of me and I want him out

Me : babe get off

He chuckles

Sky : that doesn't count

Me : it does

Sky : no we are yet to make love

He pull out of me slowly , I still feel the effects
even after he's out

.

.

.

Royalty

Walter is a beast in the kitchen , he made some
English breakfast today . I even went to seconds

Me : why do you keep looking at me like that ?

He smiles

Tyler : you smell like daddy

I sure do , makes me wonder why I used his lotion . Why shower in his bathroom to begin with

Africa walks in , in a suite one that you can tell it's tailor made . And the fabric looks expensive

Africa : Ty I don't smell

So he heard that

Tyler : everyone has their own scent daddy

Africa : I don't

With a clever child like Tyler , you'd think Africa will avoid these kind of talks but no

Tyler : Royalty always smells of cocoa butter , except today

Dante is so amused , this can't be good at all . This old man already thinks I'm something to his son . This is just an awkward moment for me , Africa looks like he doesn't even care

Tyler is not a foolish child , soon he'll start thinking things that don't exist

Dante : where are you going ?

Thank god he saves the moment

Africa : to work

Dante : well then I think I'll take Royalty and Tyler out

Tyler jumps up making noise running to his room,
someone is excited to go out

Africa : Royalty is not going anywhere
His tone is stern and very off

Dante : what....

Africa : you heard me and she's not going
anywhere

Dante : why ? Is she a prisoner ?

Yes I am

Africa : however you see it , but don't take her anywhere . Unless you want to have a problem with me dad

With that he walks out

Dante : go get ready

Did this man not hear his son ?

Me : I don't...what to cause trouble

Dante : don't be silly go on now

This man wants his son to kill me , I see him

.

.

.

Africa

I love my father , but I want him gone . He's done exactly the opposite of what I was disapproving off

Not that he even listens to me anyways , but I can't risk Royalty thinking there's a chance she'll go back to Joburg . That will never happen

I can't even work I'm so focused on the footage watching them , they're in a Camps Bay now

Having early lunch , after some crazy shopping they did . She was even taken to the spa

My father is really spoiling her , and it's only because he thinks she's perfect for me

They're laughing it's all so nice , but she's never this carefree with me

I take my phone and call my father , for the first two times he ignores it and the last time he drops it

I call one of my guys , he answers

Simo : boss

Me : take that phone to her now

I watch as he walks to their table and gives her the phone , my father is so annoyed

She takes it anyways , Simo walks a bit further

Royalty : hello

Hearing her voice , somehow calms me down . I take a deep breath

Me : I hope we still understand each other right ?

Royalty : yes

Me : earn the trust , and I might just let you live your normal life

Royalty : okay

My father takes the phone from her , he gets up and walks away from the table

Dad : this woman has no desire to entertain other man , your jealousy will push her away . Stop acting like a control freak , she doesn't want anyone

Well she doesn't want me too

Me : don't ever disregard my word again

I drop the call , I'm sure he's swearing at me . He hands Simo his phone back

Now they know I have them watched

.

.

.

INSERT 17

Sky

By all means possible , Asavela cannot find out anything about her friend . Nor can she find out what I do

This is a messed up situation and I'm just caught up in it , the Royalty situation is not my choice

Africa didn't even give me one , and I can't stab him in the back . Telling Asavela the truth , that would be me doing exactly that

So I'm staying clear of Africa , I even have my phone off . I can't have him calling me at all

That also includes Tumi , I don't want her ruining this weekend for me . I didn't tell her that Asavela is coming

She would have said no to me taking Emihle , honestly I see nothing wrong with what I'm doing

It's not like every woman I meet , I introduce to her . Just this one woman , because I love her .

And I don't want to loose her , most importantly I want to build a family with her

I don't know what to say about their relationship as of yet , my daughter is not the bubbly child

She's not out there , she's very much reserved and doesn't talk much

I hope Asavela doesn't mistake that , for Emihle not liking her

Me : shall we go out ?

Asa : where to ?

Me : anywhere , maybe the beach

Asa : I've never been to a beach before , that would be nice

Me : okay it settles it then

Asa : but I have no bikini

Me : and no woman of mine will wear a bikini in front of men preying eyes

She laughs

Asa : but....

Me : no babe cover up , maybe a short

Asa : no ways

Me : yes ways

Asa : but

Me : no buts , my goodies can't be shown to other men like that babe

Asa : then the beach is a no

Emihle walks in , she looks so bored . That's why I'm suggesting we go out

I really don't know what she likes doing , or what she spends her days doing with her mother

I'm always busy , as much as I try to make time for her . I don't want to be a father that's present financially only

Emihle : molo (morning)

She's a grumpy person in the morning

Asa : molo Bhabha (morning baby)

She just takes the remote and starts flipping channels

Me : wow

Asavela laughs

Asa : let's just stay in , until she opens up .
Maybe we can ask her what to do

Me : a 3 year old ?

Asa : yes

Now I've heard it all

.

.

.

Royalty

He walks in , I'm sitting on the bed . I slept in my room last night . After that stunt he pulled having people follow us , and dare threaten me like that

We're in Cape town , how do I run away to Joburg ?

Africa : one misunderstanding and you move out of the room ?

Misunderstanding he says

Me : I didn't move in to begin with

Africa : well you've just moved in , while we're still on that I expect your clothes in there by tonight

He walks out , I look up only he comes backs

Africa : either that or you move to the cottage
your choice

He walks out , some choice that is . That cottage
is on the far end of the estate

And it's scary there , it kind of looks abounded .
With these dreams how am I going to sleep there
all alone ?

This man is my worst nightmare , I get off the bed
and start moving my clothes to his room

Been here just three weeks but I already have so
much clothes like I've been staying here for

years. It takes me a few hours to pack everything, in the space in his closet .

When I'm done I walk into the kitchen , I find Dante with Walter . This man is always eating I don't know where my boy is at , I haven't seen him since morning when he came to greet me

Dante : you're okay ?

Me : yes

I pull a chair and sit down

Dante : Walter add some more here

Walter adds more food

Dante : now let's share and talk to me

Walter walks out , leaving us

Dante : what's wrong ?

Everything is wrong , what do I single out and leave ?

Me : nothing

Dante : don't lie , I know my son is a lot

He's more than a lot

Dante : but he's always genuine , and what he does is always with pure intentions

Kidnapping me , and controlling me like that is pure intentions ?

Dante : give him time , bare with him he will come around . Just don't hurt him , because he will make you pay the same way he did Tyler's mother

What did he do Tyler's mother ?

Me : what....

Dante : I won't tell you , because he feels something different for you . Just give him time

Me : I think you're losing me

I have no idea what he's talking about

Dante : can you possibly say you feel nothing for my son ?

I don't , his son kidnapped me

Me : I don't

He smiles

Dante : don't convince me , I don't need it

This man is losing his mind , I don't want Africa .
Quite frankly I don't think I want any man

.

.

.

Africa

My father has always has to be in everything , I
didn't leave the office early to be welcomed by
him gossiping about me to her

Already she knows I traffic girls , I'm keeping her
here . Now it's already a mission to get her to like
me

Now he's gone and made it worse , the question of what I did to Tyler's mother will always linger behind her head

Me : dad

They both look at me , how cosy sharing a plate of food

Me : don't you have a desire to go back home ?

He's already overstayed his week

Dad : no , give me a few more days

Me : your presence is really starting to get on my nerves

He laughs and I did not make a joke

Me : make yourself useful excuse us

Dad : with pleasure , and stop being an idiot . No son of mine plays to loose

I'm not playing anything here , my feelings are just screwing me over

He walks out , I walk closer to her . She's left with the plate of good she's still eating

Me : you want to talk about these nightmares ?

Royalty : no

I'm slowly losing the patience for her to open up, and at this rate it looks like it'll be a while before she even pays me any attention

Me : you're restless

Royalty : all because of men , he felt entitled to my body and violated me . You felt entitled to me and you kidnapped me right ?

She gets up

Me : don't fucking compare me to a rapist

Royalty : aren't you all the same ?

Hell no , I'm nothing like no man

Me : have I done anything to hurt you ?

She just looks at me

Me : I might be keeping you here sure , but
besides that I've never hurt you

Royalty : you shot me

I smile

Me : it was a fucking gaze , surely wasn't even
that painful

Royalty : I still bled

Me : and you don't even have a mark to show for it

Royalty : still doesn't change the fact

Me : well hating me still doesn't change the fact that I'm not letting you go ever , not even if they say Jesus is coming . He'll meet you here

I walk away to her bedroom and it's empty , I walk to mine . She's moved , at least we were getting somewhere

.

.

.

Asavela

This weekend went out way too fast , they sure mean it when they say time flies when you're having fun

Sky : are you ready ?

I just nod , I feel like crying . I still want to stay a bit longer

But I have school right tomorrow , so I have to get back to my life

Sky : you know you'll still come visit right ?

Me : I know , I'm just sad

Sky : I'm sad too

He sits down next to me and plants soft wet kisses on my face

Me : I'm going to miss you so bad

Sky : I know

Me : promise me one thing

Sky : anything

I trail my hand to his dick he laughs

Me : don't give this away please

I'm jealous now , I don't ever want another woman to taste this beast no ways

Sky : I promise my love I won't okay , he's satisfied with you

Me : that's good , please give me a kiss

I want to cherish this kiss like the last one , two weeks before I see him again . That's going to feel like a while

.

.

.

Sky

Dropping Asavela off at the airport , I came to drop Emihle at her mother's

We spent the whole day together , only because I wanted to play with my daughter and spend some time with her

Me : thank you for letting her spend the weekend with me

Tumi : she's your daughter

Me : at least we still understand each other on that

Tumi : I'm not starting with you Sky

Me : good

My phone rings it's Siya , I answer

Siya : Oceans wants to see us

Me : okay

I drop the call , since my phone has been off I'm sure he tried calling me

Once twice and that's enough for Africa , he ever calls more than that

Me : I have to go , give her a kiss from me

Tumi : how about you give me that kiss I'll pass it on

I'm lost for a few seconds until I understand what she's saying

Me : Tumi give it up , we're done

I walk out , hah women are something else . Next thing we'll be kissing and I wouldn't even be aware of how it even started

Just a simple innocent conversation with her , must start something so nasty

.

.

.

Africa

Sky walks in , he looks like a mess

Sky : I'm sorry I kept you wait , I had to drop Emihle off at her mother's

Me : this is not your family drama wena

He laughs

Sky : must me always meet during witches hours though ?

It's way past midnight , I sneaked out . Hopefully I'll be back before Royalty has her nightmares

And she realises that I'm not in bed , such things cannot be discussed during the day

Sky : Terry ?

Terry : the guys have managed to get the girls

Me : how many ?

Terry : 13 boss

Me : out of the 15 ?

Terry : yes

Sky : that's even better than the last time

Me : arrangements have been made for them ?

Terry : the guys have already welcomed them , 5 will be going to Brazil 6 will go to Netherlands and the 1 will be in the US

Me : when Ferrari realises that the girls are lost , make sure you give him easy access to me . I can't have him even suspecting I have a hand in it

Sky : right

Sure we kidnap these girls , when they reach where they're going we always strike and save them . We can't save everyone , but those we do count for something .

We can't give them back their lives , but we give them new ones. Where they start off with new identifies

I make money , they get to go live elsewhere even though they did not ask for it

.

.

.

Royalty

I wake up and I'm back in his arms , I woke up in the middle of the night

And he wasn't here , I stayed up for hours and hours waiting for him to come back

But I eventually fell asleep , I don't know when he get back . I don't even know when he left .

But he's a criminal and a thug , what can I expect from him . Late and early hours are their times

But I wonder what other poor girls was he busy kidnapping , while we were sleeping

I lift his arm , he has me locked and pressed on his body . I need to get up I can't be suffocated like this

Africa : Oya mo kae ? (Where are you going)

He's a bit offish , and it's first time I hear him speak Setswana . I don't know why but it gives me foreign feelings

Me : it's morning , I need to wake up

Africa : stay a few minutes

I indulge him , I don't know why . It's only 30 minutes later that he lets go of me

I shower first , and put on a tight body hugging navy strap sleeve dress with navy flip flops

I walk in the kitchen and find Tyler with his grandfather , having breakfast

Me : good morning

Dante : good morning

I sit down

Tyler : I looked for you in your room this morning

Me : you didn't find me

Tyler : yes , where were you ?

Dante : finish eating , before you ask such questions

Tyler : okay papa (grandfather)

He just saved me there , this boy is has a loud
month for his age

.

.

.

Africa

I can use some more hours of sleep , but the bed
got cold without her

I ended up waking up and getting ready for work ,
I have a shipment of weapons that's going on

I walk in the lounge and I find Tyler , I have to
drop him at school as well

Me : young champ let's go

Tyler : let me go say goodbye to Royalty and
papa (grandfather)

He runs to the kitchen I take his bag and walk out
to the car

After a while he comes out with Royalty , she
kisses him goodbye and he runs to the car

I've already opened the door for him , he gets in
and straps himself in I drive to his school

Tyler : daddy

Me : young champ

Tyler : Royalty is not okay

Me : she told you that ?

Tyler : no , but I see it

Wow already at this age she can see

Me : okay

Tyler : you need to make her happy

I laugh

Me : what ?

Tyler : make her happy daddy

Me : and how do I do that ?

Tyler : buy her flowers and chocolates

I'm taking advice from a 6 year old . What has the world come to ?

Tyler : and watch a movie with her

Me : that sounds like a girlfriend boyfriend thing
young champ

Tyler : I don't know , but it'll make Royalty happy

I park at the gate

Tyler : you will do it right ?

Me : right

He laughs smiling

Tyler : thank you daddy , and she'll love you too
when she's happy

He says getting out of the car . Will Royalty ever
love a man like myself ? I doubt flowers,
chocolates and a movie will do that

.

.

.

INSERT 18

Royalty

It's boring here without Tyler , that young man makes this place lively

This day has been hell , I can't stop thinking about these dreams . The most recent one I was walking in a veld , and Langa kept calling for my name

But I couldn't see him , and I tried calling for him but I couldn't . Somehow my voice couldn't come out

Dante is busy today , I haven't seen him since breakfast . I have a feeling he'll be leaving soon

And I don't think I'm ready to be left with Africa
and Tyler alone

I just wish I had space where I can be on my own
and not see anyone , but even if I can try

I can't avoid Africa I always see him unfortunately
because we share a bed and room

Voice : can we take a walk ?

I almost scream my lungs out , he's supposed to
be at work or wherever

Me : don't do that

I shout

Africa : I'm sorry I scared you

Okay , he's calm and down now I look like the crazy one

Africa : so the walk ?

Why does he want to take a walk with me ?

Africa : please

Okay that's nice and polite , at least he's not being rude and arrogant

.

.

.

Africa

It took me the whole day to gather courage and strength , to try and make her happy

We walk outside to where I made the setting , well I'm bad at this and I can't believe I listened to a 6 year old

Me : I hope you like this

She looks at me , surprised . I got the flowers white roses those symbolise peace right , and I got the chocolate

No movie though , I can't go that that much further . For now this is where I stop

Royalty : I'm your prisoner are you aware ?

Shit , can she just not put it like that

Royalty : this doesn't even look like you

Me : I was told that you're not okay , and that I should make you happy

Royalty : I knew it

Me : but it's still my money and I did this

She wants to roll her eyes

Me : don't do it

She looks down

Royalty : thank you

Well that's something

Me : you want to talk about what's bothering you?

She looks at me

Me : like why you're not okay

Royalty : something must really be wrong with your sanity

Did I just get insulted ?

Royalty : put yourself in my shoes , and let's see
if you'll be okay

I chuckle

Me : what size are you again ?

She frowns

Me : 1 ?

Royalty : 3

I feel like I'm dealing with two Tyler's and this is the female version of him

Me : I'm a 7 so sorry your shoes won't fit me

She looks at me frustrated

Royalty : that's not

Me : enjoy your happiness

I walk away from her , as soon as I'm out of sight
I laugh

Yeah sure I get her situation is unpleasant , but she's not going to manipulate me like that so I let her go now ways

.

.

Royalty

See me stuffing my face with chocolates , sad
even more . I know he knew what I was trying to
say , instead he just mocked me for wearing a
size 3

And then his father thinks I'll love his son , how
when he makes me so sad

The door opens and my favourite guy walks in ,
he sees the roses and chocolates

He looks at his father smiles walking to me , I
know he's the someone that said I'm sad to
daddy

Tyler : he made you happy ?

Me : more sad

He gets on the couch I give him some chocolate

Tyler : I don't understand

Africa : you will never understand women Ty

He walks away , I sigh I actually feel like clicking
my tongue at him . But he might just choke me to
death

Tyler : he brought the roses

Me : yes and this nice chocolate

Tyler : what about the movie ?

He also suggested a movie wow

Me : I hate movies boy

Tyler : oh , that's why you're still not happy

Me : your father did all these nice things , but
he's not nice

Tyler : I know , he's just too manly . But he has a good heart

Me : how old are you again

He laughs

Tyler : Royalty I'm 6 , what kind of mother will you be forgetting your son's age

What now ? Me a whole mother to him

Me : your mother ?

I ask innocently , like what is Africa feeding his family about us ? There's nothing going on and his son thinks I'm going to be his mother

His sight breaks my heart

Me : what's wrong ?

Tyler : I just...I've never had a mother . It's always been me and daddy with papa (grandfather)

What exactly happened to his mother ? But I can't ask him that

Me : I'm sorry my boy , come here

I pull him to me , lays his head in my stomach .
He's that short it's like he's 4

Tyler : when you and daddy get married , you're going to be my mother . And I'll stop calling you Royalty and call you mommy

I want to cry now , no one can be this sweet .
Only I don't see how that marriage is going to happen , I don't want Africa with his handsomeness

.

.

.

Africa

I don't know who is worse between my father and Tyler . Now she wants to call her mommy , and for us to get married

That would be nice right , Mrs Royalty Oceans it has a nice ring to it

But I feel like getting her will be tons and tons of work , which I'm not keen nor prepared to do

Unless she feels pity for Tyler and decides to just give me a chance , I'm worth it I know

But loving a man like me , will take a lot from her. I need to stop listening in on their conversations

But then what hurt was the fact that my son longs for a mother , I never really thought much about that

I try by all means to be here for him , but then I guess there's that void of a motherly love . And I can't give him that , I'm no woman

She walks in , I'm already in bed . I didn't even have dinner with them

After walking in on their conversation , I decided to stay in here and let them be

She gets in bed , in just busy on the laptop .
Fixing the orders we got

Royal : where is Tyler's mother ?

Not this

Me : what makes you think you can ask me that ?

Royalty is no ordinary woman , she just doesn't back down she's a challenge

While that's nice and all , it's also annoying . I don't want to be questioned right now or even ever

Royalty : that boy needs a mother , and clearly he has no idea what happened to her mother

Me : I killed her now don't ever ask me about that piece of shit of a human

Royalty : how could you ?

She closes the laptop , if it was another woman .
We would be talking about story right now

Royalty : what kind of...

Me : don't insult me okay , I know exactly who
and what I am . And guess what it doesn't bother
me , so it shouldn't bother you either

Royalty : tough it bothers me , that child does not
deserve a father like yourself

Me : well , we don't get to choose now do we ?

Royalty : you repulse me , no matter what that
woman did she didn't deserve to die

Me : don't come with your woman power in my bed

Royalty : then I'll go

She says already getting off the bed

Me : walk out that door and I'll fucking make you regret it , then we'll see who will make women speeches for you

She gives me one annoyed look , and pulls the top sheet causing my laptop to fall

Me : you better pray that it's not broken

She's scared , but she has that face of hers that says I don't give shit . If I get up it'll be over for her

She walks to the couch , I get up and walk to her.
I turn her to face me

Me : you

She goes down covering her face with both her hands , already apologising. She thought I was going to hit her

This is not because of what I said , she experienced this from a man

Me : Royalty look at me

Royalty : p...ple....please don't hut me

Me : look at me

She gets up slowly and removes her hands and looks at me , she's really crying and scared

Me : I'll never lay my hand on you

She sobs , I bring her closer to me . I swear the man who did this to her will pay

She's broken and he's to be blamed for that ,
how can he go unpunished

.

.

.

INSERT 19

Sky

Ferrari's call woke up in the middle of the night ,
he's furious . Wanting his girls

I've called the guys over , because he has
complained to them as well

Kevin : you and Oceans should have answers for
Leonardo

Me : what ?

Kevin : don't what me , you heard me

Me : are you going to ask him that ?

Africa : ask me what ?

The presence is felt in the room , he sits down

Me : Kevin here says we should answer to Ferrari about where the girls

Africa looks at Kevin , he sweat . I laugh

Me : so go ahead ask him , where Ferrari's girls are

Now cat has caught his tongue

Peace : I...think we can all try and find out what's going on here

Clive : clearly someone is trying to sabotage us here

Africa : when you say we am I included in that equation ?

I look around the table and no one has the guys to say yes

Africa : I gave Ferrari the girls , he lost them in his custody . That's not my problem

He gets up and walks out

Me : that's understood right ?.

Kevin : must you always be his lap dog ?

I laugh getting up

Me : I'm a fucking lap dog with power , what the fuck do you have ?

He clicks his tongue

Kevin : when will you have your own authority

Me : I don't fucking need it , when will you grow balls and stand up for yourself to Oceans

He says nothing

Me : right no come back for that

Kevin is arrogant for nothing

Me : continue doing that shit , I'll best the crap out of you

Peace : gentlemen

He's just like his name just fucked up in fucked up shit

Me : next time I'm in your presence , check yourself

I walk out and find Africa leaning against his car

Africa : and ?

Me : Kevin is going to be a problem

He nods

Africa : and the others ?

Me : they suspect nothing

Africa : take Kevin on a vacation

I laugh

Africa : have fun and call me when you're
satisfied

He gets in his car and leaves . The other guys have no idea that we sell these girls and rescue them

And we can't risk them knowing , if we have to eliminate Kevin so be it

.

.

.

Royalty

I walk in the room and I almost lose my eye sight.
A whole Africa buck naked

Africa : what's your problem ?

I have my hands on my eyes , but I already saw everything

Me : why are you naked ?

He laughs , it's so cute I look at him but quickly covers my eyes

Africa : have you never seen a naked man ?

Me : no

I'm lying

Africa : well you have now get over it

He says it so casual like it's nothing

Me : please get dressed

Africa : I don't feel like it

He's so childish it's annoying , how do you not feel like getting dressed

For heavens sake we share a room , can we just accommodate each other . And have the respect

Me : fine I'll leave

Africa : suit yourself

I walk out so annoyed , his father is in the lounge with a bag

Dante : where is my son ?

That picture comes back , I can't deal

Me : he...uhm he's ...

Africa : I'm here

And look at him he's dressed and so decent

Me : what was so hard about doing this , when I asked you ?

He ignores me and I'm annoyed

Dante : you two have so much frustration , and it's the love you hold towards each other

Me : I don't love him

I say aggressive , as if I'm defending myself or something and I don't know why . Africa is annoyed by what I've just said

Dante : I told you not to try and convince me of anything

This man , what is wrong with him ?

Africa : is this you leaving ?

Dante : yes , I've already said goodbye to Tyler

Africa : okay travel safe

Dante : you're pleased

Africa : your mouth just spits out words , so I won't lie and say I'm not

These two love each other , they have more friend and brother relationship more than father and son

Dante : the next time I come here it'll be to witness your wedding

I can't take this anymore , I don't know who is fooling who . Tyler and his grandfather and frustrating me . And I don't understand why Africa doesn't correct his father

Dante : stop being in denial

Me : Mr Oceans travel safe , it was really nice meeting you

I walk back to the bedroom there's no naked Africa now , he was just tormenting me

.

.

.

Asavela

School has me by the neck , it's assignment after assignment . I doubt I'll even have the time to go see Sky this weekend

And it's the week to go see him , but the way I have so much school work I can't get away

And I miss him , he's the only good thing going on in my life right now . It's still hard living going on with life , not knowing where my friend is at

And it seems like no one cares about her whereabouts , her sister and father are gone from her home

Word says it they live together in Orlando now , how sick is that ?

Her mother is left all alone , and she's just living . Even though you can see how hurt she is , but she's still living

I'm out just having lunch all on my own , I'm a loner now I don't even want to have any friends

That feels like it'll be a betrayal to my friend , and no one can ever replace Royalty . A lady catches my eye , she's with a small boy . And I know I've seen them before and it wasn't pleasant

It hits me , that it was at Cubana . She's Langa's wife , and she looks pregnant now . Could it be she moved on since he's in jail or she was already pregnant when he left ?

Just seeing her raises my emotions , had it not been her husband my friend would be here

Voice : what do we have here ?

I'm bored out of my mind , worse than I already was seeing that woman

Me : please leave me alone

Sizwe : was it worth it ? Leaving me and all I did for you

I won't even justify that question of his with an answer

Sizwe : I still want you back

Me : I don't want you Sizwe , and continue bothering me I'll have you reported for sexual harassment

He smiles it's actually creepy

Sizwe : this is not over , it's far from being over

That's a threat and he best believe I heard him
loud and clear . I pay my bill and leave

I make sure to walk where there's lots of people
heading to the taxi rank

I don't trust Sizwe anymore , he might just hurt
me to make me pay for whatever

We weren't exclusive and he knows that , I don't
understand why he doesn't just leave me alone

.

.

Africa

She's laying on the bed , Tyler is not okay since his grandfather left . He just needs to be left alone when he gets like that

I take my shoes off and get on the bed as well , I snuggle closer to her . She moves away I keep following her , until she's at the tip of the bed

Royalty : can you just stop ?

Me : what ?

Royalty : it was bad enough I saw you naked , now please keep your distance from me

I chuckle

Me : since when do we keep each other's distance from each other

Royalty : since you started acting like a pervert

Me : you walked in on me naked , how's that being a pervert

Royalty : please move back

Me : no , answer me

Royalty : I'm falling

Me : let me help you

Royalty : no I....

I pull her she flips over and ends on top of me

Me : hi

Royalty : you're not being cute

She tries to get off me , I don't let her go . The more she keeps moving the more my dick reacts

Royalty : you're poking me

Me : stop moving

Royalty : let go of me

Me : let's talk

Royalty : okay just let go of me

Me : let's talk first

She sighs

Me : who is he ?

Royalty : no one

She raises her voice

Me : no need to get aggressive , I'm not fighting with you

Royalty : I don't want to talk about it

Me : I talked about killing Tyler's mother , and I didn't want to but you made me

Royalty : I didn't make you do anything

Me : you brought it up I talked

Her heart beats so fast I let her have her silence

Royalty : I met a guy , thought he was genuine . I let my guard down and he was great in his own way , got me an apartment . I got to move away

from home , the situation just wasn't so pleasant . I was studying and working at a bar , taking care of my family . So his efforts came in handy , I saved on transport having to buy good and clothes . He did all of that even gave me an allowance . All this he did because he said he loved me and wanted to , I never even asked . It was just too late when I discovered he's married and has a child , what hurt was that I asked him in the beginning . He just became way too clever about it , and I let my guard down . He wasn't even sorry that he lied , he just wanted me to overlook that . But I was done with him , I wanted nothing to do with him . I was so prepared to leave everything and give back what he gave me, but he didn't want to hear any of that . It started with a slap , then a push when I tried to leave . Only to be followed by punches and kicks and him having his way with me . I hate him so much,

he broke me and took everything I knew as myself . And he wasn't even sorry about it

She's crying , my shirt is wet of her tears . And I hate him more than she hates him

Me : who is he ?

I should let her calm down , but it's best to push while she's vulnerable like this

Me : what's his name ?

Royalty : Langa , Langa Zulu

Of course it's that idiot , he's in jail now because of rape

I kiss her forehead

Me : it's okay , no one is ever going to hurt you again . Not as long as I live , I'll protect you with my life

Maybe Langa should join Kevin on his vacation , seems like I have a trip to Joburg

.

.

.

Sky

I'm waiting on Siya to arrive , I'm outside Kevin's hotel room . He travels in between Joburg and

Cape town , and I know he always uses the same room and same hotel . My phone rings it's my baby , I miss her so bad I answer

Me : I'm dying because I won't be seeing you

She laughs

Asa : I can just....

Me : no , no you won't babe remember

Us : school first

She says so bored

Me : I still love you

Asa : and I love you babe

She sighs

Me : what's wrong ?

She was off since last night

Asa : I saw Sizwe yesterday , and he threatened me

You leave people alone and they provoke you ,
you kill them and then you're the bad person.
That doesn't make sense at all , if you have a
problem you make means and ways to solve or

fix it . I don't do any of that , I deal with a problem the best way I know how . Which is to eliminate it

Me : I'll deal with it

Asa : I'm scared

Me : don't be babe , he'll never bother you again
okay

Asa : okay

Siya arrives

Me : now I love you , I'll call you later . I have to attend to something now

Asa : okay babe don't forget to call , I love you

Me : wake up even at dawn it's fine

She laughs hanging up

Siya : sorry I'm late

Me : you're just boring me wena , that's my thing to Oceans . Not for you to do it to me

He laughs opening the door , and moans are coming in from the bedroom . The room is a private suite

Siya : you feel like some live porn ?

Me : don't annoy me

We laugh , walking to the bedroom and the door isn't even locked. The whore is tied up on the bed

Siya : this will come in handy

I look at him he's taking a video

Me : how will you masturbate to Kevin's dick ?

He laughs , and the busy couple looks at us . The girl screams

Kevin : what the fuck ?

Me : you're so disgusting , your wife is back home you're busy fucking whores in cheap hotels

He puts on his clothes , and the girl is just so exposed to us

Kevin : Sky what the fuck do you want ?

Me : you to come with me ?

Kevin : you won't make me do shit

Me : Siya

He nods , and fiddles with his phone

Siya : it's done

Me : see your wife has just gotten that video of you fucking with her

Kevin : what ?

Me : and mostly importantly everyone who has access to the internet will see it as well

He comes charging towards me

Kevin : you son of....

Me : touch me and I'll ruin you worse

Kevin : the fuck man

Me : come with me

His phone rings , he goes to it and by the look of it it's his wife

Kevin : shit you've ruined me

Me : I can still do worse

The phone keeps ringing , until frustration takes place and he smashes it against the wall

Girl : untie me please

Poor thing is scared

Me : Kev I don't have all day

Girl : don't leave me here

Me : fuck off we didn't come with you

I walk out he follows , and Siya comes behind us.
House keeping will find the girl

Me : see things don't always have to get messy ,
you couldn't have just listened and did what I
said

Kevin : you'll pay for this

Me : yeah , yeah

How will he make me pay ? When I've killed him

.

.

.

Royalty

Opening up to Africa two days ago , I feel a bit lighter . Now it actually feels like I can find healing , like I can be okay after all

I wonder how my friend is doing ? I miss her so bad , that I try not to think about her too much. She's one part of my previous life , I don't ever want to forget .

As for my family , the drama I came across . I don't miss that at all , and maybe it's fine

Africa : are you okay ?

I nod

Africa : I'm going out , please tuck Tyler in

I nod again , I don't know why I feel so bad . That I opened up to a man that kidnapped me , and I actually felt so good doing so

That I felt really safe laying on top of him like that, and that I actually believed him when he said I'm safe . That he'll protect me with his life , that no one will ever hurt me again

He takes his keys and walks towards the door

Me : please be safe

I say looking at his back turned on me , he turns
and I look down

Africa : always

He leaves

Me : why do I care ?

Something must be seriously wrong with me

.

.

INSERT 20

Sky

Tumi called me fuming , I had to drop whatever I was doing to come see her

Me : so what are you screaming about ?

Tumi : you bring your whores when my child is around ?

Me : hey refrain on the name calling , and where is my child when you're busy screaming like this?

Tumi : now you care ?

Me : is this about Asavela being at my place when Emihle was there ?

She laughs and it's annoying , if she wasn't my baby mama I would have long slapped her

Tumi : Asavela , heh Sky keep your skanks away from my child

The name calling again , I hate a grown up who can't sit down and talk

Me : well get used to it , because that woman will be in Emihle's life forever

Tumi : what....

Me : shut up I'm talking

She moves back scared , I'll never hit her thought. She's just scared because I've never raised my voice at her

Me : you're just upset because I choose her over you , well that won't change so deal with it

Tumi : give her a child , and don't use mine to play happy families

Me : go fuck yourself

I walk out , she screams my name crying . Surely Emihle is at her mother's

There's no way she'll go all crazy on me , with Emihle around .

Women are dramatic , she's like Sizwe now .
There's a serious problem with people who don't want to accept to be dumped

If the love is over and done , just accept and don't force things . That's why she's doing now

Trying to use our child , like how that Sizwe is trying to do . Threatening Asavela

Africa

I'm meeting with Sky and Terry , one of them has to carry this out . I can do it myself , but I'll rather not

I should be going to Joburg , but I want to try and be there for Royalty right now

She might not express that she wants me to be there for her , but I want to offer it anyways

Sky : Kevin is at the house

Me : keep him there , I have a job for you

Sky : what ?

Me : I need Langa taken out of prison

Sky : hell no , do you know what he did ?

I don't appreciate that he knows what he did to Royalty , but I'll let it slide because it's him

Me : I need you to erase that and forget what you think you know he did

Terry : I don't understand , I thought you said to keep away from him

Me : and now I'm saying get him out of there , break him out if you must

Sky : don't repeat his words to him

Terry : noted

Me : I'll be heading to Joburg in a week , that's when I need him out

Sky : that's short notice , how do we break someone out of sun city in a week ?

Me : what do I pay you for , if I have to do your job for you

Terry : let me see what I can work out

Me : get on with it

Sky : sometimes you're just impossible

I get up

Sky : I was just saying

Me : I did not ask you

They laugh as I walk out , I drive to my house .
And I'm welcomed by a sulking grumpy Tyler
watching cartoons

Me : well this is new

He doesn't even look at me , I don't see Royalty
anywhere so I sit down with him

Me : young champ

Tyler : daddy

Me : so how are you ?

Tyler : fine

This man is not looking at me , he's so focused on tv . I want to poke him

Me : how's your relationship with thatuhm what's her name again ?

He doesn't answer me , they dumped him .
Without a doubt his heart is broken , that's
women for you

I told him , but he didn't want to listen . So look at him now

Me : Ty I'm talking to you

Tyler : daddy

Me : what's your girlfriend's name again ?

Tyler : Kea

He's so bored

Me : yes her , how is the relationship going ?

Tyler : she's ignoring me for Sambulo now

I want to laugh my ass off , so he got dumped for another nigga

Me : who is this Sambulo ?

Tyler : a new boy at the school

I'm really holding in this laugh

Me : oh so Sambulo gives more money than you do ?

Sambulo : he's adopted by white parents

I look down laugh , women are savages and they start this young

How dare this Kea ditches my son , for a black boy with white parents

Me : you have a white grandfather too , and you're a mixed race

Tyler : daddy you're disturbing me I'm watching tv

The arrogance is what causes me to laugh at him, he switches off the TV and walks away

Royalty : what did you do to him ?

She asks walking in

Me : he got dumped for a boy who has white parents , and he was busy acting like a blesser giving out R10

Royalty : you should be comforting him , what's wrong with you ?

Me : we all went first heart breaks he'll get over it

She walks away from me annoyed as well

Me : great

I did warn Tyler , women are heartless creatures

.

.

Royalty

That Kea is an idiot I don't know her , and
already I don't like her

How dare she breaks my boy's heart like this

And he has an idiotic father who laughs at him ,
instead of comforting him

Me : I'm sorry okay

He nods

Tyler : I don't like girls anymore

Me : that Kea is an idiot okay , you'll grow up and
find yourself a woman who will love you and
appreciate you

If I could I would trade Africa for Tyler , he's so
sweet and romantic none of these things his
father has

Tyler : okay , if only that woman would be like you

I laugh

Me : you'll get an even better one than me

Tyler : and for now I'll just love you , and let you be the only woman in my life

See how he melts my heart ?

Me : that makes me a content woman

He laughs , and that's what I want to hear

Tyler : can I sleep with you tonight ?

Me : of course

We get up and then I remember where I'm sleeping now , I brace myself

Tyler : this is your room

He says when we pass it

Me : we're going to sleep in here

I say when we get to his father's room

Tyler : in daddy's room ?

He whispers I laugh

Me : yes

Tyler : daddy doesn't like people in his room

He's still whispering

Me : we're not just people , we're his people

He giggles , we prepare for bed . I put him in the middle and I sleep on my side

It doesn't even take that long for him to fall asleep

I stay awake until his father walks in , he takes his t-shirt off . The surprise he gets when he opens the sheets

Africa : are you for real ?

Me : sleep or go sleep on the couch

Africa : why isn't he sleeping on the couch ?

Me : he doesn't feel like it

He frowns , it's so cute I want to laugh at him . So he can feel how Tyler felt

Africa : this is not on , and this is my bed

Me : our bed

He does not believe

Me : I did not ask you to move me out of my room

Africa : why is he here ?

Me : he's heart broken and he needs his mother

Few minutes he's quite , I can't believe I just said that . I did say something is wrong with me

Africa : okay come sleep in the middle then

Me : no

Africa : please

He's really begging , wonders never cease to amaze

Me : why ?

Africa : I want you closer to me

Now what do I say ?

Africa : I'm not getting rid of him , you're just sleeping in the middle

Africa is so cute and all kinds of handsomeness when he's begging , he should do it more often

Me : fine

I move Tyler and get in the middle . He doesn't waste time getting bed and hugging me

This is what he wanted to do

.

.

Africa

Tyler is the man no matter what he's the man , and he's showing me just how powerful he is in my house

Now he's in my bed , what's next ?

The second she got off the bed , the sheets got so cold . I haven't been able to sleep since then

Tyler. : Royalty

He slaps me , trying to find my Royalty with his tiny hands . He's still half asleep

Not finding her , he's quick to open his eyes and looks around

Me : she's in the kitchen

Tyler : oh

Me : good morning to you too

He smiles rubbing his eyes

Tyler : morning daddy

Me : yes how are you feeling today ?

Tyler : I'm fine

Me : really ?

Tyler : yes , mommy Royalty made me feel so much better

Mommy Royalty , what a wow

Me : oh okay , well I'm happy that you're better

Tyler : me too

He gets off the bed and walks out , before I even get a chance to apologize for yesterday

He's hurt I know , but it's funny I couldn't help myself

But I'm not happy , how this Kea broke my son's heart this way

After a while I get up , make the bed and take a shower . I wear causal clothes

I don't intend to go anywhere today , rather than just being with them and maybe we should go out together

I wake in the kitchen and it's a mess , there's flour everywhere . Even on them

Me : what's going on here ?

Tyler : we're baking

Me : oh , it looks like a tornado hit my kitchen

He laughs

Tyler : daddy no mommy is baking

Mommy again ? I thought we're waiting until we get married

.

.

.

Royalty

Tyler is a loud mouth , but I'm not minding being called mommy at all

Tyler : these cookies are so nice

He gets off his chair , and his father walks closer to me

He gets way too closer for comfort , and I'm feeling funny . I want to fight it , but that would only make me think about what Langa did

And I want to move away from it , this feeling is not making me hate myself anyways . Even though I feel like my body is betraying me

Africa : well can daddy have a cookie as well ?

Tyler laughs , Africa is right on my ass . Why is he this close to me ?

Tyler : mommy daddy wants a cookie

He walks out running , does he have an idea what he just said sounds like

Me : can you....uhm

Africa : I sure wouldn't mind a cookie

He says in a seductive tone , now I can attest
people do really feel butterflies in their stomachs

Me : can I turn at least ?

Africa : mhm

Then why isn't he moving back ? I take one
cookie and turn to face him slowly

I lift my eyes and I'm right under his face

Me : here

It comes out as a whisper , he doesn't take the
cookie yet he leans down biting his lower lip

He holds my waist , he always holds me but
today it's different . My breathing increases

Africa : I want to kiss you

Ohhhh and these lips look so appetizing

Me : the....the cookie

Africa : screw it

He says rubbing his lips over mine , and the devil
tempts me I'm the one who kisses him first

He doesn't pull out , instead he takes control and
kisses me out of this world

The cookie drops to the floor , his hands on my waist are doing the most . He invades my mouth and it's not sloppy , he knows what he's doing

The kiss gets heated up the most and warmth down there , is making me hate myself and yet love him

I should despise men , what is he doing to me ?

Africa : I don't want to push you away

He says pulling out , my eyes are still closed . He tilts my chin with his one hand , while the other is still on my waist

Africa : look at me

I open my eyes slowly , his eyes are bloodshot
red

Africa : please let me make you mine

I try to look away he doesn't let me

Africa : I know it's too soon but I'll take things
slowly

Is this me being stupid or what ?

Africa : please just don't reject me , at least say
you'll think about it

Me : let's take it slowly

He gives me one dashing smile , I fist my hands
on his waist on both sides

Africa : motho wame (my person)

I smile , a giggle follows . In English it never
sounds this romantic being called my person ,
like how I've just been called now in Setswana

.

.

.

INSERT 21

Sky

I've decided to go to Joburg with Terry , I didn't want to get involved in this . But I'm curious to know why Africa suddenly wants us to break Langa out

Going to Joburg I'll get to see my woman , I know she's busy but this way I'll see her

It won't be the same as having her coming to visit here

I open the door and walk inside , Siya is in with Simo

Me : what are you doing here ?

He doesn't answer me , this guy is like a brick .
But he does that only with me

He talks with Africa , maybe because he's scared
of him . And he's not scared of me

Me : right

I take a bottle of cold water and pour it on Kevin's
head , he slowly comes to

Me : I'll be going to Joburg for a few days , I'll be
unavailable this week

Siya : who has to watch him ?

Kevin : ple....please let...me go

Me : you will watch him , or leave him here alone
if you don't want to

Siya : that's better

Me : I don't know what I pay you for

Kevin : you can't....keep me here... forever

Me : I can and I plan to

Kevin : why...are you doing ...this ?

Me : poking your nose in things that don't
concern you , is what got you here today

Kevin : what ?

He wiggles his hands

Kevin : this is ...about the girls right ?

Me : who said you can ask me anything ?

Kevin : you and Oceans....are screwing us

Me : no , we don't do it in the ass

Siya laughs

Kevin : fuck you Jali

Me : impossible

Kevin : you'll pay for this....the guys will notice

Me : and you'll be dead so again don't bother not concern yourself

Kevin : you won't get away with this

Me : I already have

Siya : he thinks he still has a chance out of here

How crazy is that ? He thinks I have time to play with him

Me : bring the boys so they can come and play with him

Siya : it's a vacation after all

He laughs , and it's like Simo is not even in here .
I wonder where does Africa get these guys

Langa

Word has it my wife is pregnant , and by the look
of things I left her pregnant

We never wanted to have any more kids , she
tends to have the most difficult pregnancies ever

There's always complications and problems , it's
a miracle that Anathi made it

We got three miscarriages before him , and I had already given up on being a father . I'm thankful for my son , even though he's sick from time to time . But he's our miracle

Now I'm stressed more than I've ever been , she need me right now .

How is she going to get through this pregnancy without me ?

I fucking messed up and now I'm stuck here , and I'm so conflicted because I need to be with my wife

But I also feel the need to take my punishment for what I did to Royalty

It's hell in here , and you'll think being a criminal counts . It really doesn't, everyone is always trying their luck

Trying to prove who is boss , without Africa's protection I am nothing in here . It's like I've been stripped of my power

That's what happened when they distanced themselves from me , now I'm all alone

Regret eats me day and night , daily I have no rest . If I had means to apologize I would reach out and do so

But then I also feel that would be disrespect to her , like how do I hurt her like that ? And then expect her to forgive me

Officer : ziboshwa (convicts)

This is just disrespect on another level , must we be told reminded everyday that we're convicts ?
When we already know

Officer : Zulu you have a visitor

That's new , I haven't had anyone come see me since I got convicted

I get up he opens for me I follow him to the visitors room

Shocked to see Terry , he can only be here because he's sent by Africa

Me : strange to see you here

Terry : sit down

I could react but best I just do as I'm told ,
Africa's men are half heartless as he is

Terry : he wants you out of here , now you have
4 days to be useful . Spot everything and
anything that can help us break you out of here

Me : are you fucking out of your mind ?

Brake me out

Terry : watch how you talk to me Zulu

Me : well this is my life , I'm not going to ruin my chances of living a normal life by escaping

Terry : was he asking you ?

Fuck

Terry : help us so we can help you , or you can do nothing and we'll break you out our way and it'll be messy .

People will die , question is why does Africa want me out ?

Terry : I'll be back in 4 days , find every exit and quickest ways you can find

He gets up and leaves

Me : I'm screwed

Officer : back to your cell

Everything is now the least of my worries , my concern is why Africa wants me out of here

.

.

.

Royalty

These cuddles now hit so different , maybe it's because of being claimed now

Tyler doesn't want to go to school , I think he's still heartbroken . But his school is not that important so missing a day won't hurt

Africa is not happy about that , but I don't get why not ? It's not like he'll keep doing this everyday

Africa : I never finished school , I can't have a child who's uneducated like his father

I look at him he doesn't strike me as the type that didn't finish school

Africa : what ?

Me : why didn't you finish school ?

Africa : I'm not making excuses right , but having seen your parents die right in front of you . And to then discover they were killed for a fucking throne , that can mess up with anyone . And unfortunately it messed up with me

Me : I don't understand

Africa : come on let's sit

I move off him he sits up straight , and I straddle him

Africa : so I'm a prince from Batlokoa Kingdom in Botswana , my parents were king and queen of Manzini kingdom in KZN . But I didn't grow up there so that's why I say I'm of Batlokoa . I have a twin sister Asante , she's queen of Isilo

kingdom in the Eastern Cape . We also didn't grow up together , see my sister is gifted so she was taken away from Manzini as a child that's how we got separated . It was to save her and I ended up in Batlokoa . When I was like 12 maybe 13 my parents and I were talking a trip , but the plan crashed they both didn't make it . I saw them die right in front of me , that's how I met Dante and since then he's become the only parent I have . I thought it was just an accident , only to find out it was targeted by my father's brother . Who then took over the throne at Manzini , only for him to be killed also by his own brother . Who is also dead right now , and the throne is left vacant with no king just a regent . And I have a good mind to go claim it because it's mine

I smile and I actually want to laugh , Africa is full of himself

Me : I don't see you as a king , and you don't even strike me as royalty

That's no lie , Africa looks like some American rapper or a model

Africa : but it'll suit me don't you think so ?

I laugh

Me : I don't know

Africa : we should ask Ty about this , then he can tell you what an amazing queen you'll be

Me : don't kid me

Tyler is way already ahead of himself

Africa : I'm not , besides the fact that I'm fucked up and do shit...

Me : don't even go further , why do you do what you do ?

Africa : at 16 I got myself in messed up situations, and being a thug was the only way to get out of it . And at 19 I met Tyler's mother , that woman fucking messed me up

What did she do ?

Me : you said you killed her ?

Africa : she went and conspired with my enemies, I found out but by then she was pregnant with Tyler . I couldn't kill her , so I kept her hostage until she gave birth and I killed her right after I held my son in my hands

How sick is this man ? He's saying all this and he doesn't even have an ounce of regret nor shame

Africa : I'm only telling you this , my sister thinks she died giving birth . And she'll forever think that, and never find out the truth

I'm excluded from people who can tell his sister the truth

Africa : my parents death hurt me , and I never really got to deal with them . So at 16 I dropped out at school

Me : That's when you started doing wrong things?

He just nods

Me : will you ever stop though ?

Africa : no

I want to ask that being together does it change things between us , and I free to do whatever now ? Or I'm still grounded

.

.

.

Asavela

It was such a nice surprise to see my man , and
he didn't even tell me that he's coming

Me : so tell me , is this a visit or its work ? And
I'm just put in between

He laughs

Me : babe

Sky : I came to see you

Me : why are you lying ?

Sky : I'm not

Me : really ?

He nods , Sky is lying

Me : so how long are you staying ?

Sky : not sure

I laugh

Me : I knew it , you have no idea how long you have to stick around . Because you have things to do right ?

He walks to me and puts his cup of tea down ,
we're at my apartment

Sky : you just know me too well

Me : why lie ?

Sky : I don't want you to think I'm prioritising work
over you

I don't even know what work he does , Sky
doesn't look like he works to me

Me : I understand and just appreciate that you
came to see me

Sky : see why I love you

Me : I'm just the best I know

He laughs

Me : so what work do you do ?

That reaction I get , tells me he's going to lie

Me : don't lie

Sky : I wasn't

Me : your reaction

Sky : you caught me off guard babe

Me : okay do what do you do ?

Sky : I work in logistics

Me : huh ?

Not what I expected to hear at all

Sky : yeah logistics that's what I do

Me : could have never guessed

Sky : what did you think I do ?

Me : the truth ?

He nods taking a sip of his tea

Me : something not so legal

He laughs

Sky : really babe , I look like a criminal to you ?

Me : you said the truth

Sky : wow , so tell me you wouldn't mind me doing criminal things ?

Me : I would mind , but then I love you . As long I wouldn't know anything about what you're doing then I'm fine

Sky : okay then let's leave it at all , but just know

I'm not squeaky clean . I do a whole lot of illegal shit

I knew it

Me : so why lie ?

Sky : I'll lie again if it means I get to keep you

Me : wow

Sky : wow indeed

He walks into the kitchen , and I'm left like there's no way a man like him wouldn't be involved in crime . The good looks are not fooling me at all

INSERT 22

Africa

I intend to leave for Joburg today , and have Langa out tomorrow night

Terry showed me the plan and it's a way too risky, as much as I trust my guys

I think I want to do this one myself , I'll have them there but I'll also be there

A phone call with my sister , always never a dull moment

Asante : when can we come visit ?

She's still on that , and the way she's looking at me she's trying to provoke me with something

Me : what do you know ?

Asante : who is that woman that's there ?

Me : what woman ?

Asante : Tyler is soon to have a mother I hear

Me : and he told you this ?

Asante : you know he did

Me : the why didn't you ask him , who the woman is ?

Asante : why ? She's your girlfriend and not his

Asante loves treating me like a child , that time we are the same age

Me : did I tell you that ?

Asante : no

Me : then why ask me ?

Asante : I.....

Me : kgaogana (leave it)

Asante : so you're dating now ?

Me : I don't think I want to discuss my life with you

She laughs

Asante : I'm so offended

Me : I feel for you

Asante : let me love and leave you

Me : I love you more

She hangs up , I walk into the kitchen .

Me : can I provoke you and we don't fight ?

Royalty : what ?

I walk closer to her and take her hand

Me : I have to go to Joburg in a few hours

Royalty : why ?

Me : I need to go deal with something

Royalty : and you're leaving us ?

Me : I can take you two to Joburg

Royalty : when will you be back ?

Me : tomorrow

Royalty : should I be worried ?

She looks down , and I don't get worried about what

Me : about ?

Royalty : are we exclusive ?

Me : yes we are

Royalty : okay , and there's no other woman right?

This is too sweet , how did we even get here ?

Me : I'm all yours

She giggles

Royalty : that hits better

Me : I'm glad it does , but hear me . You never have to worry or be concerned about any other woman

Royalty : thank you

Me : don't thank me , when a man loves a woman loyalty has to become a priority

Royalty : which is why I'm thanking you

I took this woman , kept her in my house . With no clear intention of what to do with her .

And now she's the best thing in my life and my son's life

.

.

Sky

Leaving my girlfriend felt like saying goodbye for good

I hate how I love Africa like a brother and I'm willing to sacrifice myself for him

I shouldn't even be getting involved in this whole thing , but here I am

Terry : on my mark

Me : I don't get why we're sacrificing ourselves for Langa

He laughs

Terry : okay , the guys are ready

Me : do you trust these guys of yours ?

Terry : they're good for it , in our line of work you should know never trust anyone

Me : mhm and I don't trust you right now

Terry : you're right don't

And right then he gets up and starts running towards the fence

Me : what happened to on my mark ?

I get up and follow behind him , there's three security guards and one prison Warden on the inside

I don't trust this whole thing , it was just supposed to be the security guards and no warden

They're carrying one big bag , and without a doubt that's Langa in there

Terry : throw him over

The guards move back and throw the bag over the fence , Terry is quick to run with it to the car

The warden takes off his cap and it's Africa , how in the hell did he get inside

Africa : open up

He says to one of the guards and he makes a hole through the fence

Me : you want to explain this ?

Africa : we got the man that's....

Alarms go on the hole is still a bit far from being done

Africa : fuck

Gunshots everywhere , guards are out and firing at us . We have no choice but to fire as well

Africa gets hit but he's still firing , and not taking the fall

I can't get on the inside , there's no way I can cover him

Terry comes back , and he just rips the fence .
Coming towards it Africa takes three more shots

We just pull him through the fence , Terry takes a shot picking him up . He's bleeding very bad

We run towards the car , greeting in I drive out .
There's police sirens everywhere

Me : you have to hold on , I can't take the short cut . It's too risky

He's looking to be getting out of it , I can't have
Africa's blood on my hands

He can't die in my presence , I would have failed
him

A few more turns , we're able to have lost the
cops . But the road is too long

It takes 2 and a half hours to get to the house ,
Terry runs inside with Africa

I'm left in the car with Langa who looks like he's
not even here

Seeing the blood of Africa , it just angers me .
He's hurt all because of this idiot

Me : if he dies , I swear I'll make you watch as I kill your family one by one and finish with you

I get off the car , tears stream down my face . I take a few minutes to compose myself before walking inside

Me : how is he ?

Terry : he's lost a lot of blood , but nothing a blood transfusion can't fix

We're always keeping blood packs in every house we have , to be able to take care of such situations . Africa is type O that's difficult blood to find , hence we make sure it's always stocked

Me : how bad are the wounds ?

Terry : one just missed his vital organs by just an inch

I don't need this , I really down

Me : fix him up , we're leaving

Terry : is that....

Me : I wasn't asking for your input , fix him up
we're leaving

He nods , I walk out . And call Siya

Siya : sure

Me : get the house ready

Siya : how bad ?

Me : very bad it's Oceans , but we're coming

Siya : alright , let me gather the guys

I drop the call . It would have been better if it was me who took those hits and not him . Two hours Terry is done making sure that he gets through the trip to Cape Town

We leave , and the most important things in my mind is his son and that he lives

I have to go see Tyler , he's probably wondering where his father is at

And who is he left with ? I don't understand what Africa was doing there

He shouldn't have come , it would have been me or Terry shot . That would have been fine

.

.

.

Royalty

I don't feel okay at all since last night , and today Africa is supposed to come back

I didn't know that I'll fall for a man who kidnapped me , and fall this hard

I just want him back home , it's just been a dull morning for me

Tyler's laughter calls me to the lounge , and it's a one of the guys who was with Africa where we were kept

I don't know why , but seeing him brings me back those memories of being locked up in that place

Sky : uhm hi

He's so nervous and not to mention the shock

Tyler : uncle Sky daddy is not here

Sky ? Is that his name , wait it can't be the same
Sky as that of Asavela

But then how many Sky's can there be out there?

Sky : I know young champ

Me : boy , please excuse us

Tyler : okay , don't leave without saying goodbye

Sky : yes I won't

Tyler walks out

Sky : uhm we meet again

Me : we do

Sky : can I please just say , I'm very sorry about....

Me : no you're not sorry , you kidnap women for a leaving . Sorry doesn't excuse that at all

Sky : you're right it didn't , but I'm still sorry

Me : as you heard Africa is not here

Sky : I know , I came to check on Tyler I didn't know anyone was here with him

Does this mean Africa leaves Tyler alone when he goes on these things of his ?

Sky : I...I'll take my leave

Me : are you dating Asavela ?

I don't know why I'm asking but I need to know ,
he looks down and it answer me

Me : does she know ?

Sky : no , and I swear I didn't know either you're
her friend . You weren't supposed to be caught ,
we wanted the other girl . But in panic they took
both of you

That still doesn't make it any better , here I am today and this is my reality

Sky : she took your disappearance hard , after finding out who you were I couldn't bring myself to tell her the truth

Me : because you knew she was going to leave you

Sky : I love her okay , and I had no idea where Oceans took you

Me : how do you live with yourself ? Don't even bother to answer , pretty fine I'm sure

Sky : I'll go say goodbye to Tyler

He walks past me and I don't know why I hold his hand , the most strange thing happens

Africa is getting shot , and there's Langa beaten up very bad bleeding tied to a chair

I let go of his hand as fast as I can , the whole thing plays in my kind

Me : I'm not crazy

I'm so scared

Sky : are you okay ?

I look at him , I want to ask him where Africa is , but something is stopping

Me : say goodbye and don't come back here
again

I walk away from him , and now I'm worse than
how I was feeling before I saw all of that

How is it I touched his hand and I just had a
vision like that ? Where is Africa and why did I
see Langa like that?

Either I'm loosing my mind , or its signs that I'm
soon to

Langa

I knew there was no way Africa would risk his life
to save me for nothing

Sky got really angry and his emotions got the
better of him , he took all of those frustrations on
me

My body is numb , I'm in so much pain it even
hurts just to move

He did a number on me , and he wasn't holding
back

To think I didn't get beaten up nor raped in jail ,
only to be beaten up by Sky

Siya unlocks the door and just pushes me inside,
I fall and groan in pain

Siya : you two have fun

He closes the door and lock , I left my head and
try to get up

Voice : who did you screw ?

I shift my eyes to the corner and it's Kevin

Me : the fuck you care ?

I sit up , holding my ribs . He laughs

Kevin : I don't , but then I guess it's Oceans and
his lap dog

Me : you're here so I guess you'll know

Kevin : after seeing him kill so many people ,
mercilessly we still fucked him up

Me : speak for yourself

Kevin : you're here too

Me : and I have no idea what I did

He laughs

Kevin : you raped Zulu , Oceans doesn't stand
for that

I guess everyone knows

Me : I know , and he distanced himself .

Kevin : so why bring you here ?

Me : me and you both are wondering

I have a feeling this won't end well for me

.

.

Royalty

I haven't had any sleep in two days , I keep seeing Africa get shot

And he's supposed to be back but nothing , now I know something bad happened to him

Tyler is starting to ask where he is , and I don't even know what to tell him because I also don't know

Sky still comes around to take Tyler to school and drops him off

He doesn't come inside the his because I told him to never come back here around

But today I asked him to come see me , after he drops Tyler off at school

I don't think he will come back , but he walks in

Me : thank you for coming

Sky : what's wrong ?

Me : where is he ?

Sky : who ?

Me : don't make me a fool please , tell me where he is

He sighs

Me : Sky

I shout

Sky : no need for that , he's....he's not okay right now

Me : take me to him

Am I crazy ?

Sky : I can't do that....

Me : I'm here all because of you , and this is the least you can do . So take me to him

Sky : I...

Me : now

Poor guy wants to fight me back but he just looks drained , and that's working for me

Sky : okay

I don't want to hear anything , I walk outside to his car . He follows me gets in and drives

The ride is long that I even regret demanding it , but eventually we arrive and it's at Khayelitsha

In just a normal house , that you'll believe a normal family lives here

Inside it's these thugs and the looks they're giving me , now it's hits me that I'm a prisoner in that house

I don't get to make demands , nor do I even have the right to go anywhere

Sky : here's in here

He points to some door , I open and walk inside .
It's a normal room

Except that it has him sleeping on a bed , you'll swear it's a hospital bed

I walk closer to the bed and it pains me seeing
him like this

I've really fallen in love with this man , and I don't
want to lose him

.

.

.

Africa

I try to open my eyes , but it's so hard and the
pain is not giving me a break at all

Royalty : Africa you don't get to kidnap me ,
make me fall in love with you and then you do

this to me . You have to wake up okay , for me .
For us and for our boy .

She's crying , I try to move my hand so I can hold
her . I can feel that she's not far from me

Me : I...motho wame (my person)

My voice is so scratchy , but she hears me

Royalty : you're okay right , like you're really
okay. Open your eyes

She takes my hand into hers , I bring it to my
mouth and kiss it . She giggles

Royalty : you can open you're eyes right ?

I nod , I'm still trying but it's so hard

Royalty : I hate you for worrying me this much

Me : I...I love you

I've never even told her that

Royalty : it took you to take 4 bullets to tell me that ?

Sky is the biggest idiot I know , how can he tell her all of this ? And even bring her here

I open my eyes and it's a bit blurry at first , after a few minutes I'm fine

Me : such a beautiful sight , after knocking and
deaths door

Royalty : you're not being cute

Me : but I...love you

She smiles

Royalty : and I love you

I never thought I'll hear those words out of her
mouth like ever . But I'm glad I have

Me : come here

Royalty : do you want me to hurt you ?

Me : you won't , come

She takes her shoes and gets on the bed , the
stomach wound sure pains

But I want her this close to me , so I'll just endure
it all

Royalty : what does Langa have to do with this ?

Is there anything he did not tell her ?

Me : motho wame , ga ke tlhaloganye (my
person, I don't understand)

Royalty : fine lie to me , but just know I'm not letting go of this

Sky has a lot of explaining to do

.

.

.

INSERT 23

Africa

I feel like shit , but I'm glad my woman came to see me and we talked

Although she's not really happy with me right now , and I must say as happy as I am

I still don't appreciate Sky bringing her here . He still has to account for that

She's already left , because Tyler will be back from school soon . She didn't want to not be at home , when he arrives

The door opens Sky walks in , he is back from dropping her off

Sky : before you rip my head off , I did nothing wrong . And she was shouting at me to bring her here

Me : first of all , what the fuck were you doing at my house ?

Sky : oh that ?

Me : yes that

He pulls a chair and sit down , Sky used to come to my house anytime he wanted

But when I took her I told him not to go anywhere my house , so why did he go there?

Sky : I went to check on Ty , remember I didn't even know she's there

That's right

Me : and telling her about Langa ?

Sky : tell her what ? I did not say anything about Langa

He's serious and possibly telling the truth

Me : and bringing her here ?

Sky : like I said , she was shouting at me .

Demanding that I take her to you , and she's the one who came at me . Asking where you are and all of that , it's like she knew you weren't okay

Impossible how would she know ?

Me : that's nonsense

Sky : well it's what happened , and I'll never lie to you

He's right about that , I guess I need to go talk to my woman

.

.

.

Asavela

Sky went AWOL at me , right after we spent a few days together

On Thursday night he was gone and I never saw him again , nor did I hear from him

I keep calling but his phone is off , if only I wasn't so busy with school

I would be right on a plan to Cape town , I won't be taken for a ride nor made a fool out of

Mom : you're back home ?

Why can't my mother just greet like a normal human being?

I've been at my apartment , crying myself since my boyfriend went AWOL on me

Me : hi ma

Mon : don't hi ma me , why do you keep doing this ?

Me : doing what ?

Mom : should I spell it out for you ?

I've honestly gotten better since I've started dating Sky , I'm home most of the time now

Me : it was just a few days

Mom : still

Me : ma please

Mom : why don't you just move out ?

This is a shocker

Me : am I being kicked out of my father's house ?

She's a wife here , I'm a child so this is both not our house . It's my father's

Mom : did you just ask me that ?

Me : yes I did

It was not disrespectful though

Mom : you seem to have a problem with living here at your father's house

She's mocking me

Me : kodwa ma (but mom)

Mom : no buts , make a choice

I could go live at my apartment but I'm scared
now to live alone

I walk to my room , I don't want to argue with her.
But she wants to do so

Africa

I want to do back home I can't stay here
anymore, a week was enough

I'm still not good nor healed , but I'll live . And I'll rather go and be at home with my people

Sky : Terry says you're leaving ?

Me : yeah , who's driving me home ?

Sky : I am

I get off the bed

Sky : are you and Royalty

Me : don't ask me nonsense

He laughs

Sky : how did that happen ? I mean like you wanted to kill her

Me : because you failed to

Sky : I can never kill a Mamie like that

Me : call her that again, and I'll have no problem killing you

We walk out to his car , I can't even walk too fast

Sky : but when did you start becoming a thing ?

Me : we're not a thing

Sky : that woman almost bit my head off because of you

Me : so ?

He gets in and drives

Sky : no woman can react like that for nothing
I chuckle

Sky : so you won't tell ?

Me : we're not friends

He laughs , we arrive at my house

Sky : I'm not coming in

He says as I walk out

Me : you're scared of her ?

He goes quite I laugh

Me : she should have been here earlier

Sky : bye

Me : wait....where's Langa?

Sky : with Kevin on his vacation

Me : alright

I need to be okay and recuperate first , before I deal with this

.

.

.

Royalty

Tyler is happy to have daddy back home , and that makes the two of us

Africa : why are you looking at me like that ?

We're in bed cuddling , he's been back for a day .
And I don't feel like letting go of him today

Me : how am I looking at you ?

He chuckles

Africa : okay why don't we talk about this ?

Me : this ?

I'm just toying with him nothing much to it

Africa : okay , okay motho wame stop (my person)

I laugh

Africa : how did you know about the whole Langa thing ? Because Sky said he didn't tell you anything

Me : he didn't

Africa : okay so ?

Me : I saw it

Africa : saw it where ?

Me : I don't know where

Africa : ska ntira byana (don't do me like this)

He plants soft kisses on my lips , and I just want to kiss him

Me : it just happened okay , I took touched his hand and I saw you getting shot and Langa

He just stares at me like I said the most craziest thing ever

Me : don't look at me like that

Africa : sorry

Okay he's not himself anymore , I don't know what I did to him

I try to get off him , only he pays attention to me now and holds me . I avoid moving too much so I don't hurt his wounds

Africa : where are you going ?

Me : anywhere

Africa : I'm sorry , but do you have gift ?

I laugh

Me : no I don't

Africa : then how did you see that ?

Me : I don't know , maybe your friend is just a creep

He chuckles

Africa : I've knowing him to years

Me : so ?

Africa : so he's not a creep

Me : well then I don't know , because I have no answers for you . And don't go there , I have no gift and quite frankly I don't even believe in those things

Africa : what things ?

Me : gifts , tradition and culture . You said you're a prince and I know Royalty is very big on that

He smiles and I know why

Me : I meant Royalty as in like royal people

Africa : and what a coincidence that your name is Royalty

Me : it's just a name , amazes me how my dumb parents were able to come with such a name

We laugh

Africa : you're starting to be a mystery

Me : please stop with your scenarios

Africa : okay , only because you're commanding me to

Does he know that I'm only comfortable with him, because now we're dating ? But then I'm still scared of him , what if he wakes up tomorrow and decides to sell me off ?

That's silly I know , but you can never confirm Africa

Africa : I took Langa out of jail because I want to teach him a lesson

Me : in my name !

Africa : what do you mean ?

Me : I didn't even want him to go to jail to begin with , that's not getting me justice

Africa : I don't care about justice , I just want to teach him a lesson .

Me : do it because you want to , not because you are doing it for me

I'm not being ungrateful , but two wrongs don't make a right . And whatever he does to Langa let him do it because he wants to

I hold him tight , and kiss his forehead he laughs
I end up laughing as well

Africa : you're making me feel like a baby

Me : you're my baby

I give him another forehead kiss

.

.

Africa

Tyler went to a sleep over to that Sambulo boy ,
who took Kea from him

Apparently they're friends now , I'm sure Kea has
ditched Sambulo for another boy

That girl seems to be too busy , when I asked my
boy just said daddy let it go

And that was it , women start their traits very
young . That's why it's hard for them to change
even when they're older

But this boy disappoints me , how do you
befriend someone who took your girlfriend ?

Only women do that shit , of becoming friends
after they've shared the same man

You don't become friends with an enemy ,
Royalty reckons Tyler is over his heartbreak

That was just too quick , he'll still get hurt again .
He should have cried a bit more this time , to be
strong for next time

She comes out of the bathroom , wrapped in just
a towel . Her thick thighs exposed . I'm a man
and it's only fitting I get turned on , seeing my
woman like this

And she's fucking packing , I've never dated
black women like ever

I've always dated white girls , and that tells you I
like them skinny with no ass and all

But damn this right here is my type , and a black
beauty as she is . I don't even want her a shade
lighter

She's perfection at its best , I wonder if she knows that . The stunning body shape put aside , she's fucking beautiful

A true African beauty

Royalty : you know women also lust over men ?
I laugh

Me : I'm not lusting over you

Royalty : right

She bends taking the lotion

Me : are you tempting me ?

She giggles , I get off the bed . She's making me
sleep day and night as if I'm an invalid

I hold her waist we lock eyes , and she graces
me with her smile

Me : whether you're tempting me or not , I am
tempted

Royalty : I feel for you

Me : yeah I feel for me too

I unwrap the towel it falls down , I take her lips
into mine pick her up

I lay her on the bed , she parts her legs I settle in between them . My hands trail down to her boobs

She lets out soft moans in my mouth , I pull my sweatpants off . Leaving just my briefs . I trail down planting soft wet kisses on her stomach , reaching her coochie

Royalty : wait....wait

I lift my head and move up , give her a soft kiss

Me : of course , I'm sorry it's too soon . We're taking it slow

Royalty : I want to

Me : whoa no , no pressure I can wait okay

Royalty : it's just...he wasn't wearing any protection I'm scared I don't know if I'm clean or what

Langa is a fucking pig , I need to get well so we can be done with this

Royalty : I don't want to infect you if I have anything

Me : I don't mind

She slaps my arm

Royalty : can you be serious ?

Me : I am

Royalty : I don't want to infect you okay

Me : well how about we agree on something , stop me if you're unconditional doing this or you're not ready . And can it not be because of the fear of infecting me

She says nothing , I kiss her she returns the kiss.
I take my briefs off , I move her up to the pillow

I get on my knees , we lock eyes . I bring her legs to my shoulders

Me : if it hurts tell me , if you're uncomfortable tell me , and if you don't want to anymore just say okay

She nods

Africa : mafoko motho wame (words my person)

She smiles

Royalty : I'll tell you

Me : good

I lean down she welcomes me we kiss , I rub my
dick on her coochie

She's ready , I slide it slowly . When her body
gets tense I stop , I have to be very delicate with
her

When she relaxes I slide again , until I'm all in . I pull out of the kiss , she has her eyes close

Me : look at me

She opens her eyes

Me : are you still okay ?

Royalty : I'm still okay

She smiles I return the smile , and thrust in slowly .

I can't have her having flashbacks , from time to time I ask if she's still okay . And she assures me

Pleasure starts to kick in for her , she has her hands all over my upper body

Trailing to my waist , she holds there for dear life. To accommodate her I get a hold of myself not to go deeper or faster

I let out a few groans leaving my cum inside of her , it takes a few thrusts she's at her end

But she's holding it in , and her body is taking a toll . This will be a painful pleasure , but she'll fucking enjoy it

I rub on her clit viciously to help her release , she can't even say much . She wants to push me off , but her moans are told loud

She can't even say a word out , I only pull out when she orgasms and she brings her legs together . Screaming her lungs out , grabbing on the sheets

.

.

.

INSERT 24

Africa

The worry I woke up with this morning , I'm the most happiest man

And it's all because of Royalty , there's no way
and chance in hell I'm loosing all of that

And as I man I fucking make measures to keep
what's mine

Royalty : where are you going ?

She catches me right at the door

Me : I have an errand to run

Royalty : are you avoiding me ?

Royalty has a small voice , it's not tiny but it's
small

And sometimes when she talks I feel like I'm listening to Tyler , his female version

Me : no

Royalty : then can you please just....

Me : motho wame le byale ke go utlwelletse aker, hela ke swanetse ke tsayame nouyana ke itsi go phakisa ke bowa (my person I listened to you right , but I have to leave now so I can hurry back)

She looks down sulking

Me : ska ntira byana (don't do me like this)

Royalty : this is serious and I feel like you're not taking it serious

Me : I am

She best believe me I am , and it seems like it'll be a threat to our relationship

I don't like those and so , I'm too quick to remove them

Me : give me an hour I'll be back

She nods , I leave I don't even want to kiss her or be sweet

She might just make me not leave anymore , I drive to the court house

I arrive in less time , and I'm sure I have speed tickets awaiting for me

He's already outside waiting for me , I like people who are consistent with time

I walk out of my car and meet him

Me : Judge Menzi

Menzi : Oceans

Me : I believe you came through for me

He hands me the envelope

Menzi : I hope this will not cost me my job nor ruin me

I open it and take the papers out

Me : you did good and I'll be sure to make sure you're taken care of

Menzi : always a pleasure

We shake hands he walks back , I head to my car

Me : now I can relax

I take my phone about and call Sky , he answers on the third ring

Me : can you send 450K to Menzi

Sky : the judge ?

Me : yeah

He laughs

Sky : I wonder what did you do this time

Me : keep wondering wonder woman

I drop the call , I can't have any traces
connection me to the money

That's why I can't send it myself

.

.

.

Royalty

That man knows how to please a woman and just be gentle about it

Wasn't he the one who kept waking me up middle of the night , just because he couldn't sleep

And wanted some more sex , and I did not deny him anyway . And not because of pressure , but because I wanted to

I just loved and appreciated how , he always
wanted assurance that I'm okay

Who knew Africa was this kind and sweet ?
Definitely not me

He showed me a side of him yesterday , that I
didn't know he had . Before all this he was just
nothing to me , but a guy who deprived me of my
life

But now he's all that I care about , and I don't
really mind how we met

I guess in life we all have our journeys and ways
of how we meet those who complete us , and this
was mine

As sad and bizarre as it is , I'm learning to make peace with it . Hopefully with time , he'll give me those life privileges

And not deny me certain things , hopefully he can trust me enough to know that I'll never leave him

Even if he were to let me go now , I'll always come back to him . Crazy and maybe I sound like a lunatic , who falls in love with their capture ?

As much as I'm glad that we've reached that point where we can sleep together

And I'll have no flashbacks of the rape ordeal , I'm still scared and concerned

Langa didn't use any protection with me , the man is married . Who knows how many women he slept with out there unprotected

I don't want to infect Africa with anything I might have , if I have anything and I hope I don't

But I cannot ignore the possibility , and he has a child who needs him . He has to live for Tyler . If I'm sick I cannot risk endangering his life , and probably cutting it off

I had to beg him to have me tested , and so of now he's not happy at all

As much as he doesn't seem to have a problem sleeping with me unprotected

I do have a problem , because I'm concerned for his life and health

But he eventually agreed and now we're at the doctor

Who has just taken all blood tests and sexual transmitted diseases

To say I'm scared would be an understatement , I'm horrified

Africa : calm down

He holds my hand , I guess seeing how I am softens his heart

Africa : it's going to be okay

Is it really ?

Africa : I'm here and not going anywhere right ?

I nod , he might not go anywhere . But if I'm to be sick he might just sell me off

What will he do with a sick woman he just kidnapped and happened to fall for ?

I doubt Africa and his friends have compassion for women whatsoever

The doctor walks in , it's been a while since she's gone

Africa insisted the tests be taken to the lab , and I guess having money will make you jump the line

Doc : Mrs Oceans your results are back and...

Me : It's Ms....

Africa : yeah get on with it

And then ? Did he just cut me off from correcting the doctor

Doc : okay , I'm ordered bonded by the law to advice you on this matter . That if the results come back positive , you need to know it's not the end of the world . For any of the tests that we did , there's treatment that you take . And on some diseases after taking the treatment you'll be rid of them

I just nod

Doc : I have a question for you Mr Oceans that if it happens that your wife is positive of any disease , more especially HIV how will you feel ?

Is she supposed to be asking him that , and why does she say I'm his wife ?

Africa : should I feel anything ?

Africa will embarrass you right in front of important people

Doc : let me rephrase the question , would that change how you feel about her or change anything between you two and your relationship?

Africa : nothing will change

He says it like it's nothing , something is seriously wrong with Africa

Doc : Mrs Oceans if the results come out that you're positive , what would be your reaction ?

Why don't we just see the results , so we can see my reaction ?

Me : I don't know

Doc : okay well

She opens the file and goes through it

Doc : on any other sexually transmitted infections
you're clean

Africa : I told you , you have nothing to worry
about

He reaction though , and it's what I'm focusing
on. And she said on any other , not all

Me : and the other ?

Doc : just bare in mind there's still life , and it's
not the end . You'll take treatment live a healthy
life , like any other person

She hands the file to me and I already want to
cry

I'm like I've already infected Africa , why couldn't he just listen to me

We wouldn't be here right now , I don't know if I can live with this

But maybe I can , but knowing I infected him I can't live with that at all

Doc : you're HIV positive

Being himself he takes the file from me , his expression is cold like the first time I saw him

I'm scared of what reaction he might have , I look at him with pleading eyes as he looks at me

Me : I'm so sorry

Tears stream down my face , I hate crying in front of people . But I don't care about this doctor right now

I try to take my hand off from him , but he doesn't let go

Africa : what are you sorry for ?

Me : we shouldn't....

I can't even say it , how ashamed I am right now

Africa : I'm fine

I won't listen to him right now , I look at the doctor

Me : can he get tested as well ?

Doc : if he wants to then yes

Africa : I don't want to

Me : but....I'm scared I might have infected you

I lower my eyes from him saying that

Doc : your CD4 count is very high and it's not infections . So there's no ways you could have infected your husband

I look at her

Me : but... I'm positive

Doc : yes Mrs Oceans you're positive , but the virus is not infections .

It sounds like she's talking a foreign language right now

Doc : it's possible , rarely but very possible . I have other patients like yourself who are positive, but the virus in their body is not infections . You will have to take treatment , because now the law and department of health requires everyone who is HIV positive to take it . It does not mean you're dying or anything like that

Africa : so then why must we worry ?

Doc : you really shouldn't , she should just take medication eat well and keep healthy and she will live long

I still want him to get tested still so that I can know that I did not infect him

Africa : motho wame , we did this now can we just let it go ? You're it dying you're fine it's okay . You'll take the treatment (my person)

I didn't think he will be this cool calm and collected about this whole thing

Doc : and you can have HIV negative children , who are healthy

Can she just stop , we're not even thinking about kids . I have a 6 year old boy , who still needs my attention

Me : I still want you to get tested

Africa : Doc just get in with it , so we can leave
I'm tired of being here

I've never seen Africa so bored , and if it was under different circumstances I would laugh

The doctor does the test for him , and it's the 5 minutes one and it's negative

Now that's a relief , I wouldn't be able to live with myself knowing infected him

Doc : we can offer counselling ...

Africa : yeah she'll get it if she wants , but for now can we just leave

She looks at me I nod , this man is now agitated .
She gives me the pills and instructs that I take one per day

After a meal and late in the evening

.

.

.

Sky

Turns out the night of breaking Langa out of jail ,
I lost my phone

I replaced it but it's been a struggle getting my
woman's number

What man doesn't know his woman's number by
heart ? This man being me

And I can't make a sim swap , if anyone who
shouldn't have that phone gets a hold of it

It'll be trouble for me , so now I have to go to
Joburg to see her

I'm sure she's furious where she is , and I don't blame her at all . I just disappeared on her

Not on purpose of course , but she doesn't know that

And with my track record , she's probably thinking the worst where she is

Me : thank you for letting me spend time with her

I spent the whole of today with my daughter , because I'll be gone for a few days maybe a week

And that would get Tumi going mad and crazy on me , that I'm not spending time with my daughter and what not

Tumi : it's okay , she is tired and worn out .

She's even sleeping now

Tumi : seems like you had fun

Me : we did , I'm going to Joburg for a week the longest

Her face changes , and I'm just being kind and honest to her

Because she's the mother of my child , and I still respect her

Tumi : your daughter won't see you for a whole week ? Because of a woman

Me : don't start with me Tumi

Tumi : yes talking to you , is starting with you Sky

Me : you're just provoking me for a fight and argument . And I'm not up for it

Tumi : go to your...

Me : call her name's again , and I'll forget the whole baby mama and you'll be like an enemy to me

Tumi : really ? Is this you making your choice ?
You're choosing her I've us ?

This is just being crazy , whoever said to baby
mama's they own the baby daddy's must be
seated down and instructed on this life thing

Me : I'll never choose no woman over my
daughter , and right now Emihle hasn't given me
any reason to make a choice

Tumi : whatever she fed you

Me : I won't mind being fed it over and over again

She takes the bottle next to her and throws it at
me , it leaves a scratch on my cheek

I wipe the blood with my hand , she cries before I even do anything . Not that I intend to do anything

Tumi : Sky I'm sor....

Me : I should go

I take my keys and walk out leaving her crying .
The same way women will say , make sure you make a child with the right guy

It's the same with us guys , can we just make sure we make kids with the right women

Now she's just hurt me , had it been me who
threw the bottle at her and hurt her like that it'll be
gender based violence

A fucked up world that favours women over men,
I could have retaliated and I would be the one
blamed

Forgetting that she's the one who started it

.

SPONSORED INSERT

INSERT 25

Africa

Maybe because I'm the one that's not sick , so I don't get what the big deal is

And not in a bad way , or arrogantly . In just a way that it's not life threatening to me , nor to her
This is a not a death sentence , she doesn't have to go through this alone I'm here

And I have no intentions of going anywhere , her being HIV positive doesn't change anything

She's tossing and turning , I've even stopped holding her a while ago because she's relentless

I want to sleep but knowing she's battling , and beating herself up about this doesn't allow me to

Me : motho wame (my person)

I bring her closer and snuggle her right next to me

Me : ke a go rata (I love you)

Royalty : I'm scared

Me : ke ya itsi (I know)

Royalty : I don't want to lose you

Me : you won't lose me

Royalty : you won't get rid of me , now that I'm sick ?

Me : I have no intentions to let go of you ever

She holds tight on me I hope she believes and trust me . I'm many things yes , but being a fool is not one of them . Leaving now that would make me the biggest fool ever

Me : you're going to be okay , and we're fine . I'm here for you

You find love and it's not easy , there's challenges . And it doesn't necessarily mean leave , unless that was the intent from the beginning

.

.

.

Sky

The ride to Joburg was one filled with all sorts of emotions

I also feared that she might have just dumped me, and I'm not aware

Nowadays women don't cry over relationship ,
they say thank you and head to the next one

We've hurt them so much , to a point that they've
learnt to just close up and shut down

Not having her number , I drive to the apartment
first . And it seems like she hasn't been here in a
while

Me : she'll have to forgive me for this

I drive to Soweto and it's already later , but to my
luck I spot her as she's about to close the gate

I don't even park the car right , I run to her . And my sight just repulses her , she's really not pleased with me and I get it

Me : please let me explain baby

Asa : explain what Sky ? How you disappeared over a week , and no text to phone call no nothing

Me : I...I want to explain all of that

Asa : I don't want to hear it

Me : aibo babe

She's angry , and I just want to hold her

Asa : hamba Sky (go)

Me : andifuni (I don't want to)

She just looks at me and locks the gate

Me : yhoh I have it bad

I wait around a bit thinking she'll come out but nothing

I go back to my car and call Tumi , I want to talk to my daughter

But she doesn't answer her phone , she's still acting up on me I guess but I won't entertain her

Maybe I should just take my daughter , because
she's a Jali I paid for her

And I won't agree to being punished , using her .
Some mother's are just cruel

And the next thing you know , she'll be bad
mouthing me to the child

.

.

.

Asavela

I'm late for class , only because I couldn't sleep
crying

The way I love Sky , and seeing him after not being able to get a hold of him for so long

It made me happy , yet sad and angry at the same time . I could have listened , but I wanted to react first . And now I don't know if I'll see him again

I walk in the kitchen and find my parents , the relationship with my mother hasn't been great as of late . Only because she thinks i'm gone back to being wild , she didn't care then what I did . And now it bothers her

Right when I've toned it down , I only leave home when Sky is around

And it's never even for a long time , just a few days and nothing more than that

Me : molweni (good morning)

Dad : molo Ntombi yam (morning my girl)

Mom is quite

Me : I have to go , I'm already late

Dad : without eating ?

Me : I'll grab something on the way tata (dad)

He smiles , I leave . And what do I know ? Sky is camping in his car

Right outside my parents gate , it's so sweet and cute but crazy at the same time

I knock on the widow , but the car is not even locked

Me : this is Soweto do you want to get carjacked?

He rubs his eyes

Sky : morning baby

I'm the crazy one , because he's calm and all

Sky : damn my neck hurts

Me : serves you right

Lies , I want to give him a heck rub right now

Sky : please get in the car and let's talk

Me : I'm late for school

Sky : let me take you to school

Why not ? I get in the car he adjusts his seat and drives

Me : you will be charged for trespassing one of these days I swear

Sky : that's fine , look I want to say I'm sorry I disappeared . But remember I told you I have a job to do , it didn't go all smooth . We encountered problems and one of us got shot , in the process of all of that I lost my phone . I don't know where or how , but I got to replace it .
Problem was...

Me : my numbers

I don't know why he never took the time to know my numbers

He really doesn't know them , and it only took me 3 days to know his number

I'm disappointed in my boyfriend , but I can't fault him for something he had to control over

Sky : I'm sorry my love , I should have come back . But I had to make sure the person who got shot was okay

Me : I'll sound selfish , but I'm glad it wasn't you who got shot

He smiles , I hold his hand

Me : please go to the apartment , shower eat and get some rest . I'll come see you after class

Sky : I'll be staying around for a week

That's great , it's actually just amazing . Because he's never stayed that long

Now the problem is my mother , what am I going to do with that woman ?

.

.

.

Royalty

I thought I'll make peace with this and be okay

But I'm struggling , I'm scared and I can't stop wondering . Like why me ?

Did it have to be me ? Like I didn't ask for this , I never asked for any of this

I didn't go out there seeking it , but I still got it . Then what was all the point of saving myself ?

Only to be raped , and left with HIV at that . I think I'm just more hurt , than I'm sad or angry

It's been a few days and everyday it's a struggle to make peace with it

Tyler : mommy you cut yourself

He shouts startling me a bit , and I've cut my finger

It's not and , but I'm bleeding and Tyler being the sweet Tyler he tries to touch the finger

Me : don't

I'm quick to remove it , and he doesn't look okay now . I wasn't even aggressive about it

Africa : what's going on ?

He looks at his dad and flaps his lashes and walks out , I hope not to cry

Me : it's my fault

Africa : you're bleeding what happened ?

And unlike Tyler just takes the hand by force , I don't get why Africa must be this careless

Me : he wanted to touch it , and I told him not to

Africa : oh , let's see to this

He wipes the blood , and puts a plaster on the cut . It's nothing big though

Me : I wasn't trying to offend him

Africa : I'll go talk to him , don't worry about it

He walks into the lounge , that's where Tyler is at. Not being able to hold myself I watch and listen to them

Africa : young champ , mommy wasn't trying to hurt you

I'm mommy and it's official , I guess we're no longer waiting for marriage

And right now I don't see any of it ever happening , not that I saw it before . But there was a chance

Tyler : but I was trying to help her daddy

Africa : I know

Tyler : she was bleeding

Africa : I know and daddy helped her , and she's fine now

Tyler : but I wanted to help her

Oh my baby , now I'm sad I walk in crying

Tyler : mommy

Me : baby I'm sorry okay , I didn't mean to upset or hurt you

He looks a bit off

Africa : Listen young champ , mommy is not well. That's why she didn't want you to touch her blood, so you don't get sick as well

Tyler : but how will I help her ?

My baby boy just wants to help me

Me : you can still help me , but when I'm bleeding you can't touch my blood unless you're wearing gloves

Tyler : but I don't want to touch you wearing gloves

Africa : you touch her with gloves only when she's bleeding

Tyler : I can wipe her tears ?

Africa : of course you can

He doesn't waste time wiping my tears off , so
this is why he was off

He wanted to wipe the tears , but was scared of
how I'll react

Me : I'm sorry okay ? And mommy loves you

Tyler : I love you mommy

He lays his head on my chest . Being sick just
doesn't affect me but it affects everyone around
me

I can't toy nor take chances with their lives

.

.

.

Africa

With days going by , Tyler is starting to understand that mommy is sick now

And everyday at 20:00 Pm , mommy takes medication

And I think she's also starting to be accepting of her situation

As for me I am not bothered at all , I've made peace with everything

A slight knock comes at the door , and it can only be one person

I get up and open for him , he has a glass of water in hand

Tyler : daddy

Me : young champ

Tyler : can I come in ?

Me : of course

I open for him , he walks in and walks to his mommy

Tyler : mommy it's time to take your pill

I am a shit of a man , but damn I'm doing a
stunning great job in raising my son

I'm certainly not making a mistake when it comes
to that

Royalty : thank you

She takes and water and takes her pill , I don't
know if it's really time yet

Tyler : I'm going to sleep now

Royalty : I'll come tuck you in okay ?

Tyler : okay , goodnight daddy

Me : goodnight young champ

He walks out , I look at my African Beauty . She has the biggest smile ever

Me : you know he's not being sweet

She laughs

Royalty : you're telling me

Me : he just wants to charm you and earn points

Royalty : jealousy doesn't suit you

Me : I also give you your medication everyday , you never give me such smiles

She continues laughing

Me : Tyler is being adored at my expense

Royalty : let me go return the favour and be sweet and kind to him

Me : I'm ignored

She gets up and goes to tuck him in .

My wounds are healed now , not completely but I no longer feel the immersive pain

I can go deal with my guys on vacation , it's been way too long overdue

.

.

.

INSERT 26

Asavela

My man is here and there's no way I'll just let him be . My mother will get upset and eventually be fine , if she wants

And if she doesn't that's also fine it's not my problem

Me : I'm thinking of moving back here

We're just cuddling in the lounge , watching a movie

Sky : why ? What happened at home ?

Me : mom is on my case , about leaving whenever you're around . And mind you I don't do those disappearing acts anymore

Sky : I'm sorry , move back if you want to . This is your place anyways

I brush his face , and my finger comes in contact with the scratch . I've been meaning to ask about it

Me : what happened here ?

Sky : Tumi happened

I look at him

Sky : don't bite my head off okay , she wasn't happy that I was coming to see you . She threw a bottle at me

I've heard it all , I give up

Me : you have a psychotic baby mama ?

He laughs , and I'm serious

Me : she's abusive

And how do you trust a person like that with your child ?

Sky : aka funi ukulahlwa nje uTumi (she doesn't want to be dumped)

Me : she's dangerous

Sky : hah babe

Me : don't say hah babe , next time she might hurt you even worse

Sky : not before I hurt her first

Me : Sky

Sky : all I'm just saying is that she better not start with me

Me : please don't hurt her , do it for me and your daughter . We need you and we don't want you going to Jail

He says nothing but I hope he's heard me . I don't want him doing anything that might condemn him

.

.

.

Langa

Four days and four nights being kept here , no one has come to even check on us

We've run out of food , and water . I'm slowly losing strength and energy . I pray that I don't die before I've made things right , I don't even know how I'll do that

But I wronged Royalty and my wife . Both of them have been hurt and broken , by my actions and doings

Kevin : this is bullshit

This man is annoying , he never shuts you

Kevin : look at us

He sounds so drunk , and it's only because he's
lost strength worse than me

Kevin : two of the greats , and this is how we die

Yeah he's right it's fucking messes up and it's
bullshit

But I'm paying for my sins , I don't know about
him and I don't care

Kevin : we're going to die locked up and chained,
like fucking starved dogs

The door opens and Jayden walks in first , and
you know it's about to go south

Africa walks in , and he's not in the mood . Not
that he's ever been in the mood

Having been in his circle for so long , you get to
know all his men

And know who is who , and what they're all about

Sky is like his mini self , Terry he's the muscle ,
Simo is the trustee and Jayden he's the ruthless
monster within

So he came with a monster , shit is about to go
down for us

He grabs a chair and sits in front of us

Africa : I'm a bit disappointed

He looks at Jayden and they have an eye communication , he walks to us and starts untying us

Africa : I'm no coward , I don't tie people . I want a man to have a fair fighting chance

It feels good having the ropes off my hands

Africa : before we get to it , I want us to have a man to man . Jay excuse us

Jayden drags Kevin out , leaving us alone in the room

Africa : step by step , I want you to tell me how it felt raping a defenceless woman . I want you to give it to me in detail , what was going on in your mind . When you forced yourself on her

Me : it wasn't supposed to happen , I just went there to apologize and explain the situation

Africa : how did your dick end up penetrating her by force ?

Me : she wanted to leave me

I relive the whole moment again , remembering how she was so determined to leave me

Me : She was done and wanted nothing to do with me , right there and there I just became so selfish and wanted to keep her all to myself . I developed a love for her I didn't realise it was there , until that moment . And I couldn't deal with the rejection , I lost it

I lift my head and look at him , he's changed into something I've never seen

Royalty

I always get relentless when Africa goes out at night , but today it's worse . And what I'm seeing doesn't help either , it's like I'm in that dark room

With juts light from a window , it's Africa and
there's Langa . He's talking about the day he
raped me , I've never heard a man cry this much

And it's not even pretence it's a sad cry , he
regrets what he did

Both to me and his wife , unfortunately I don't
hold any forgiveness for him

A victim will say I cried and begged my rapist , I
said sorry and apologized for something I don't
know

I didn't cry , I didn't beg nor did I utter any
apology . He still did what he did and raped me

He didn't feed on my tears nor pain or anger , he
fed on my silence so he shall live on it

The anger on Africa's face , I've never seen anything like this . It's visible and out there , he's even sweating dripping water

It doesn't even look like normal sweat , it's like water which is very strange

Africa : you'll never forget the name Royalty Oceans ever again , because that's the name why you'll never be a man

Just then Africa throws Langa across the room , his body makes impact with the wall

He falls down , and I swear something is wrong with that back . There's no way it'll still function fine

Africa starts kicking Langa over and over on his manhood , his screams and cries are too much for anyone

How is Africa even bearing to hear this , and still be this angry ?

And have the urge to still keep on kicking this man , he doesn't stop until they're blood all over his shoe

It's coming from Langa's manhood

Me : Africa no....no....no please....no....no you'll kill him please.....no

It's like he doesn't even hear me , I don't know
how I feel like I'm in the room

And seeing everything that's happening , in
there. This must be a dream , but it feels so real.
And I can't watch any longer , Africa is not
stopping . Even seeing that Langa is losing
consciousness

He keeps on kicking at him , and directly at his
manhood that he starts coughing blood

I scream out loud hoping that he can hear me
and stop , only I feel his hands shaking me

I open my eyes and I'm crying , he's right here
next to the bed looking at me scared

I'm sure I'm losing my mind , I bring my knees to my chest and just rock myself back and forth .

He hugs me and I just let him , right now I don't understand what I'm crying for

Africa : what's wrong ?

I can't even utter a word out , maybe it was just a dream yeah there's no way I could be dreaming that and it happened

But Africa is here with me , when did he get back?

.

.

.

Africa

She moves up , and her body tenseness

Me : mommy don't do this with me

She pushes me off laughing

Royalty : what's wrong with you ?

Me : you want to deny me what's due to me right now

Royalty : I'm not

Me : then let me

She parts her legs again , but you can feel she's hesitant

Me : don't do this

Royalty : I'm scared

Me : but...

Royalty : at least use a condom

Me : ska mpotela , I'll never use a plastic with you I want it raw (don't tell me nonsense)

She laughs

Me : mommy

Royalty : Africa stop

Me : mommy

Royalty : daddy

We laugh

Me : he'll hate us both for this

Royalty : stop imitating my boy

I trail my hand down to her coochie , she's so
fucking wet

I don't get why she's denying me , and her as
well pleasure

I play around her coochie with my finger , rubbing
on her clit with my thumb

Royalty : you need to steam first

My ears are deceiving me

Me : what ?

Royalty : you killed a man , steam first before we
do the deed

I laugh at the deed part , but I'm like what man did I kill ?

Me : I didn't kill anyone mommy

Royalty : daddy I saw what you did to Langa

Not this shit again

Me : let me guess and you have no idea how you saw it ? That's why I found you crying

Royalty : I thought it was just a dream

Me : then what changed ?

Royalty : tell me you didn't do it

Me : I didn't kill him

Royalty : you were kicking him so bad he bled

Me : and that's all I did , he's alive I left him there
I'm not shocked that she's somehow able to see ,
my sister is gifted so I'm accustomed with these
things

Even though I don't understand hers , and yet
she ways she doesn't have a gift

Royalty : you scared me there

Me : that's why you were crying ?

She nods

Royalty : what will happen when that kind of anger takes over you and I'm with you alone?

Me : I'll never lay my hands on you

She looks at me , and it's a sincere and concerned look

Royalty : you showed me a side of you I didn't even know you have . One that's worse than what I've always imagined you to be

Me : I'm sorry , and I'm only sorry that you saw that . I'm not sorry of what I've done , I wanted to and I did it . I spared his life I didn't go far bad

Royalty : you killed his manhood

Me : I did good

She shakes her head , I left Langa there I didn't want to kill him

He has a child , he's a father I'm a father and that's the only reason why he's still alive

Me : were you serious , I should steam ?

She laughs

Me : now that's better

Royalty : you still need to steam

I sit up straight and scratch my head

Me : now I feel like I'm dating a Sangoma
(traditional healer)

She laughs getting off the bed and she's naked ,
like all these goodies out there

In front of my eyes and I can't even touch them ?
Over steaming

Life is floor mat

.

.

.

INSERT 27

Africa

Tyler keeps poking me and it's annoying , but I end up looking at him anyway

Me : what ?

He gets closer to me

Tyler : mommy is hungry daddy

I shift my eyes to her , and she's eating his food .
Hers is finished

That's one thing I've noticed of her lately , she
eats a lot

And no she's not pregnant , we don't use
protection and she's not preventing

But I would know if I got her pregnant , and I
haven't done that as of yet

Tyler : she's eating my food

My young champ is defeated right now

Me : are you hungry ?

He nods

Me : go ask Walter to make you something to eat

Tyler : I'll eat in the kitchen

Me : okay

He slides down the couch and walks into the kitchen

My person here isn't even bothered , it puzzles me how she ate her food finished

And started eating his food , it doesn't make sense to me

Royalty : where is he ?

Me : eating in the kitchen

She looks around , and realises she's eating his food

Royalty : oh my...it's these damn pills

Me : they make you eat a lot ?

She nods

Me : it's okay he doesn't mind , just let him eat in there and finish

Royalty : I need to apologize

Me : don't eat his food again

Royalty : what....

I laugh to stop her , she gets up and walks into the kitchen as well

I hope there won't be any food fight in my house

My phone rings and it's mu cousin , we haven't spoken in a while and the only reason he could he calling is because I'm in shit . I answer the call

Me : Motlokoa

Motlokoa : Batlokoa , nare ntso letshela sentle wa Rra ? (Are you still well my brother)

Me : I can't complain

Motlokoa : e fela re lla ka ditiro tsa gao monna ,
ga re ya itumela sentle (but we are displeased by
your actions , we are not happy at all)

These damn ancestors , they always have to dig
into things that don't concern them

Motlokoa : waitsi gore okase tsaye mosadi , wa
fela wa ska moitsisi bagolo (you know that you
cannot take a wife , and not introduce her to the
elders)

Me : and I plan to do things right

Motlokoa : but you've already taken time

Me : if I say I'll do them right , then it means I will

Motlokoa : ae ga relwe , le nna ke ya utwa (no we're not fighting , and I hear you)

Me : then give me the time to do so

Motlokoa : of course

Me : pass my greetings

Motlokoa : will do

I drop the call , it'll be a while before I go to
Botswana

I have a trip to Manzini awaiting me , the rest can
wait for now

.

.

.

Sky

The week was just cut too short , but I couldn't
increase it anyways

It was just great spending time with my woman
as always

And always a bitter sad moment having to say
goodbye

With June exams approaching , it'll be a while
before I see her . But she understands , it's
school first and everything else follows . Including
me

Which is why I made sure that we spent enough
time with each other

I had to come to the house first arriving , before
even going to my house

I walk inside the room and it's an unconscious
Kevin in the corner , a badly beaten bleeding
Langa on the floor

And the blood is even drying , to show it's been maybe a few days being like this

And a out of mind Jayden in the middle of the room . I say out of mind because he's zoned out , and when he's like this it means Africa is worse

They cause damage and chaos and lack remorse after every action

Me : is it safe ?

Even I get scared of them , I still value my life and I have a child needing me

Jay : yeah

I walk inside further , and crouch down next to Langa

There's still a pulse but it's faint , he can die any moment if not helped

Me : is he supposed to be removed ?

Jay : he left him like that

I nod taking my phone out and call Terry , I guess the intent wasn't to kill him

Terry : sure

Me : come in here quickly

I drop the call , I hope he's somewhere near .
Few minutes later he walks in , but stops on his
tracks seeing Jayden

Me : if you don't do anything , we're going to lose
him

He walks in fast picking Langa up and walking
out . I hope he lives , because I know as much as
Africa didn't want to kill him

He won't give a damn if he dies or what . But my
guys who are watching Sizwe tell me his wife is
pregnant

A fucked up pig as he is , his family still needs
him

And if I fuck up in life , I still want to be given a chance . For the sake of my family , and that's what I'm doing for him

Me : and what about him ?

Jay : he's my concern

Okay I need not hear anymore , that's one blood that will not be on my hands

I walk out and go into Terry's work room , he's busy with Langa

Me : and ?

Terry : he's fucked up bad

Me : will he be okay ?

Terry : yeah and never use his manhood again ,
and his legs took a knock

Me : meaning ?

Terry : it's possible he won't be able to use them
for a while

Me : but as time goes on he'll be fine ?

Terry : only time will tell

I nod walking out , I leave for a week and come
back to this . What a welcome !

.

.

.

Asavela

I'm moving out today , and I'm actually taking my things that I've always left here at home

And this time around I sat my parents down , and talked to them

And of course my mother threw a fit about it . The left right in the middle of the talk

Me : I didn't mean to upset her

Dad : I know , she's just hurt

Me : I'm just going to Rosebank , not halfway across the world

Dad : no one understands the love of a mother to her daughter

I doubt my mother even loves me

Dad : don't take it to heart , let me go talk to her

He gets up and goes to their bedroom , I hope he can be able to get through to her

I'm not a child I'm 21 and soon to be 22 , I can't be treated like I'm 15

Almost an hour later no one is coming out , I need to go now . Sky has a driver who's picking me up

I walk up heading to their room , but I stop right at my tracks at the door

My mother is crying , and it sounds like my father is trying to comfort he

Blame the ears , their curiosity is even bigger than that of the cat . I listen closely

Mom : I shouldn't have given her up , maybe god is punishing me for that with Asavela

Aibo , gave who up ? And whoever she is why am I being compared to her ?

It's Royalty all over again , my mother always compared me with her

How she's well mannered , how I could learn more than a thing and a two from her

But none the less my friends always told me not to mind that , because she's her and I'm me

Dad : don't say that

Mom : how can I not ? That women raised my child under the most unpleasant and difficult conditions , while I was just right around the corner watching . Doing nothing to help her

Dad : because of the agreement that was made ,
it wasn't your choice . Her father wanted her ,
and remember they weren't even supposed to be
this close to us

Mom : we both know she did this to spite me ,
she got the man and got to raise my child

Her child ? I balance myself with the wall . So my
mother has another child that's not my father's ?

Dad : and she still grew up to be the most
strongest girl ever

Mom : and now she's gone , and no one seems
to care . She's gone and I might never get the
chance to see her again . She might never get to
know that I'm her mother , I failed . I failed both

my daughter's , Asavela is just so spoilt , she thinks the world revolves around her

Now true feelings are being said out loud

Dad : don't fault yourself in any of this

Mom : Royalty is my blessing

Me : what ?

That zing sound in my ears does the most , this cannot be true

Mom : that's why I named her Royalty , she's unique and rare . She possess all the royal qualities and only deserves the best . I discarded her and now I'm living to regret that

No , no there's no way that Royalty is my sister .
How can they keep such a thing from me ? From
us both

She's only two years older than me , does this
mean my mother cheated on my father or what ?

Or she met her father first , they had her but he
was already married

So the wife took the child and she met my father
and had me

I can't take this anymore , I drag my shocked self
out . Taking my bags going to the car

I feel like my world has come to a stand still , now
it all makes sense

Why she cared so much about Royalty , how she
never minded when she ate at home

I can't this is all too much , I'm sure she wishes I
was the one gone and not her precious Royalty

Her blessing in her own words

.

.

.

Langa

Why the bothered to give me a chance to live I
don't know why

And what's the point of going to live like this ? I'm
temporarily paralysed

My legs are useless , my manhood is useless . I
can't even hold in simple urine

I'm here stuck on this bed , using a pouch . I'm a
fucking invalid , all because I couldn't control
myself

One thing I'm not getting is how is Royalty a
Oceans ? The relationship between her and
Africa

If only I had known , I wouldn't have dares gone
after to begin with

He walks in and he has his usual cold face , I can only hope he's here to finish me off . As much as I want to live , but this is not living

Africa : you live

Me : barely

Africa : I see that

I know he's not here for chats , but I won't dare ask him what he wants

Africa : I don't owe you any explanation , and I don't need to justify myself to you

Me : understood

Africa : but take this a second chance , and life lesson learned . A no means no , a don't do this means no , a push means no , a stop means no , a I'm not ready means no , a cry means no , a scream means no . It's men like you that taint the rest of us with the same filth

Me : noted , lesson learned

Africa : and don't you worry yourself , you'll heal and walk again

Me : and I'll be nothing of a man , not ever being able to use my manhood . What use of a man am I ?

Africa : worry not nothing a few surgeries won't fix , well it'll cost you of course . But surely you can dig a few millions somewhere

He walks out , and I hope what he said is true .
I'll do anything to make sure I'm okay again

.

.

.

Africa

I only went to see Langa , because I can see that my person is not taking this well

She really didn't like how I turned out in there ,
and I get it

There's fear that maybe one day I might just turn,
and be that to her . Which will never happen

I'm no women beater , well unless the woman is
not mine . Then I sure as hell can bend where I
have to

I've just arrived at home and she welcomes me
with a kiss , one that makes me want to rip her
naked right here

Me : was I missed that much ?

She laughs , security disturbs alerting that there's
cops at the gate

Me : let me go see them

Royalty : but why are they here ?

Me : let me go find out okay ?

She nods hesitantly

Royalty : do you think it's about me ?

She's starting to panic now , and I don't like this reaction .

Me : even if they are you're not going anywhere ,
so don't get any ideas

I pull away from her and walk out , to meet them .
I don't like how I've just talked to her

But I'm not losing her , blood will spill before any
of that happens

And she can forget any ideas that she'll ever
leave

I arrive at the gate and there's 6 cops with 3 cars

Me : what a party . Officers what can I do for
you?

Officer 1 : Mr Oceans , you're under arrest

Me : I am ?

Officer 1 : as I was still explaining , you're under arrest for defeating the ends of justice and helping a convicted convict escape prison

The other one already has cuffs out , I just look at them as one walks closer to cuff me

Officer 3 : you have the right to remain silent , anything and everything you say can be used against you in the court of law . You have the right to a lawyer , and if you can't afford one the state will appoint one for you

With that being said I'm inside the back of a police van

To my surprise , we're not heading back to Joburg . Shouldn't they be taking me where the crime took place ?

I'm taken into the interrogation room , the one how was busy reading my rights to me walks in

Me : you're the boss ?

Officer 3 : Mr Oceans it would be in you best interest to just confess

Me : don't you have evidence ?

Officer 3 : being arrogant won't help your case anyhow

Me : the same way it won't help yours

He sits down

Me : don't do that , give me my phone call

He laughs

Me : great we're cracking jokes

Officer 3 : see , we have been after you for years

Me : is that so ?

Officer 3 : you feel yourself huh ?

I nod

Officer 3 : but this time we have you . Because your blood was found at the scene of the crime

Me : right that's fine , my phone call

We stare at each other for a while , he gets up and leaves . Another one walks in

Me : the justice system of this country is crap

He laughs and sits down

Him : I agree , the name is Smiso

Me : are you playing the good cop bad cop on me ?

Smiso : oh no

He takes his phone out

Smiso : make your call

With his personal phone , I take it and dial a number it rings a few times and he answers

Nqaba : Oceans , what have you done this time

Me : I need your services

Nqaba : where are you ?

Me : right where I am

Nqaba : I'll be there first thing in the morning

I drop the call , and hands back the phone to its owner

Smiso : have fun

He gets up and walks out , my worry is my family.
Royalty must be going out of her mind worried sick

.

.

.

INSERT 28

Royalty

I couldn't sleep not knowing what happened , but then I knew that he had to be arrested

Cops arrive he goes to see them and doesn't come back

The worry has me even forgetting how he spoke to me before leaving

It shows even in a relationship , Africa will always see me as his prisoner and nothing more

I think the idea that I'll ever have a normal life again , I should just forget about it

Tyler has to go to school , and I have no idea who will take him

He has no idea his father is not home , how would I have told him ? What would I say to the child

The door bells rings , I get up to open the door . I hope it's one of the guys , more especially Sky

He can take Tyler to school , I open and it's neither of them . It's one who looks hella expensive with his dreadlocks

Him : Mrs Oceans

That again

Him : Nqabayomzi Bangani I am your husband's attorney

Oh that's nice

Me : he's not my husband

Nqaba : can I come in ?

I make way for him , he walks in we sit down in the dinning room

Me : can I offer you anything to drink ?

Nqaba : no thank you , I'll rather we attend to this pressing matter . Your husband would like you to come see him

Me : okay like I said he's not my husband , but I can go see him

Nqaba : you will go see him as his wife , because according to these papers and the marriage certificate you're married

He says taking it out and a few documents , I look at them . And supposedly I am married to Africa

Me : this is a lie

Nqaba : that's your signature

I take a good look at it , and yes it sure looks like me . But I know I didn't sign anything

Nqaba : if I know your husband , and I think I do pretty damn well . He had this forged , but the courthouse doesn't know that . And home affairs doesn't know that either . Mrs Oceans I have new marriage documents here , that he has already signed . I just need your signatures , so I can sign as well as a witness . So this can be legalized , I don't deal with underhanded things

He places the new documents in front of me , I just look at them

Me : I'm not signing that

Nqaba : either way you're already married , this is just me giving you the chance to have your right in it

Africa has dealt me here , no wonder that doctor kept calling me Mrs Oceans

Me : can I go see him before I sign ?

Nqaba : I need you to walk in that police station as his wife , a thing I would have recognised myself

Some lawyer he is

Nqaba : you're his only chance of walking out of there , but that can only happen if you're his wife. Which you already are , but I don't trust those fist documents . I trust mine , I'm a witness to the union

Me : I don't know how me being his wife will help him

Nqaba : you're the key to him getting out

Great so I'll be used to have him out , how nice
perks of being me

I take the documents and sign when I'm done he
signs as well

Nqaba : thank you

Me : what is he arrested for ?

After doing this to me why do I still care ?

Nqaba : a crime that took place in Joburg

Me : some wife I am yet I can't even be told the whole truth .

He looks at his wrist watch

Nqaba : thank you for this I need to get going I'll be back in an hour or two to get you

He packs his things leaving the marriage documents and the marriage certificate

Me : my son needs to be taken to school and with his father in jail ...

Nqaba : I'm sure I can make a turn

Me : thank you

I go finish getting him ready , I don't think this
Nqaba will hurt my boy

.

.

.

Asavela

I cried myself to sleep , I wake up this morning
and I'm still a mess crying

How can my parents do this ? I have known
Royalty for over 4 years

And not once not even my mistake or a slip of tongue , did they ever hint we are related

She lives 4 streets down to ours , all this while I thought she's just a friend

But she's my half sister , I always took her as more than a friend

Because she became that friend that ended up being a sister , not knowing she's really my sister

I don't know how I'm feeling right now , I'm pretty much overwhelmed , and I'm not okay at all

I wish I could have had the guts to stay and confront them , and hear what they would say for themselves

Sky : babe stop crying so I can hear you
I'm sure he's already tired of this phone call , but
I need someone to talk to

Me : I'll call you later

Sky : no , we are talking now . So tell me slowly
taking your time and not in a hurry

Me : Royalty is my sister

Sky : I know that

I don't think he understands

Me : you think she's my sister because I always referred to her as a sister , more than a friend

Sky : so now what are you saying ?

Me : that she's actually my half sister , she's my mother's daughter

Sky : shit

Me : babe are you okay ?

He clears his throat

Sky : yes my love I'm okay

Me : oh okay

Sky : I'm sorry about all of this okay

Me : yeah I'm sorry too , and now she's gone .
She might never know that we are siblings

Sky : it's a messed up situation

Me : I know , get back to work

Sky : you're missing school ?

Me : I can't go there babe , I just want to be alone

Sky : I wish I was there now

Me : it's okay

Sky : take today only , but tomorrow pick yourself up and go to school

Me : yes dad

He laughs

Sky : I love you baby

Me : I love you mine

We hang up . I have always loved Royalty , my mother might have always admired and adored her

The comparison didn't matter that much ,
because she always told me to overlook it
She's always been the perfect daughter my
mother anger

But now knowing that she really is her daughter ,
I don't know how to feel about her

It's not her fault , I don't even blame her because
she doesn't know any of this

.

.

.

Langa

I never thought I'll be broken out of prison only to be on a bed useless not being able to do anything to myself

I can't even go see my family , they're the only thing in my mind as of late

How is my wife doing ? Handling the pregnancy alone , and is Anathi still well ?

The divorce was a move to help her move on , only it'll make me distant

But I blame myself , I didn't see how spending 15 years in jail would be a good thing for them

I'm just praying and hoping for another chance , just to make things right with them

And hopefully we can move past this , and be okay as a family again

If she can pull through the pregnancy , then it'll be a new beginning for us all

Sky walks in , he's loving to be a regular here

Sky : Oceans came through

Me : with what ?

Sky : he found a doctor for you

He says it as if he's the one who will be paying for it

Me : one who will leave me dry

He laughs

Sky : that's your business

Me : sure is

Sky : all I know is that , every man knows that they should always pack

Me : yeah well

Sky : should I get in touch with the doctor ? So he can come through and check you out

Me : the sooner the better

Sky : alright , I'll get on with it . And after this I hope to never see you again Zulu

Me : I wouldn't want to have it anyhow

He walks out , I don't even know why do they give a damn

.

.

.

Royalty

Nqabayomzi never got to it the other day , to take me to see Africa

But he came through today , it's only been three days and yet it feels like months

I had to lie and say he went away on business to Tyler , I really don't wish any of this life to any child

Having parents who are so not stable , one minute they're here and the next they're not

Does he even think about his son , when he does all these things of his

If I was not here , who would be looking at Tyler?
Makes me wonder who looked after him all this

while . Surely this isn't the first time Africa does these things of his

He walks in , and he has a change of clothes .
One I didn't bring him in , I'd hate to even think they're another woman

Africa : motho wame (my person)

He sits down

Nqaba : looking good

Africa : as always , what have you got ?

Now I'm not even being paid attention to ,
Nqabayomzi looks at me . As if I'm not supposed to hear what he has to say

Africa : she knows

I wonder what do I know

Nqaba : okay so the evidence they have is your blood right at the crime scene , in the prison at the fence and outside the fence

This one is going to jail , how do I help him get out when they found his blood there

Africa : tell me you can tear that apart

Nqaba : anyone and anybody , could have spilled your blood right there to frame you . They have no footage whatsoever of you there . They

suspect a warden that went rouge , helped you to take out Zulu

Of course Nqabayomzi is corrupt , how do you defend a man like Africa who kidnaps woman ?

I'm not judging because I'm sleeping with him , I love him and now I'm married to him

Africa : then get me in front of a judge , I need to go home

Nqaba : I'll get it done , let me give you a minute

He gets up and walks out

Africa : you hate me ?

I wish I did , but I still love him

Me : why ?

Africa : you scared me with the whole tests thing,
I thought you'd want to leave me if it turned out
you're sick . I couldn't risk that because I love
you , and what better way to keep us tied

Me : you sound like a lunatic right now ...

Africa : no need for the insults

Me : and Africa I don't appreciate you taking such
decisions about my life , you already deprived me
of what I knew as my normal . You still go ahead
and do this

Africa : I'm not sorry about it

Me : of course , there's nothing you're ever sorry about

Africa : come on

Me : don't tell me to come on , I hope you get out of here because Tyler doesn't deserve a father that's a jailbird

I get up

Africa : I love you

Me : unfortunately I love you too

I walk out leaving him grinning with a smirk

Africa

Her anger is justified , I can't blame her . She wasn't even supposed to find out , but Bangani being himself

He wants to play the whole family man with a son and wife to his advantage in court

When he fights about the blood , I hope to be home in a few days

Smiso : you have a phone call

He hands me his phone I answer

Me : yeah

Sky : your sister is looking for you , should I give her the number

Me : yeah

He hangs up , Smiso has made my life so easy in here . Dude is just looking to make a quick buck on the side

I don't blame him , a cops salary is very much so pathetic

The phone rings again , and it's my sister . I wonder what she wants to talk about now , I answer

Me : lorato lame (my love)

Asante : Africa who are you ?

Shit

Me : what ?

Asante : you know I tried so hard so hard to put seeing you kill Ndalo away

Me : I'm classified as some killer now ?

Asante : I can never do that okay , you helped save my marriage I'll forever be thankful for that

Me : so what's this now ?

Asante : I heard you're in jail

Me : heard from who ?

She laughs , she didn't hear any of this from anyone she saw it

Asante : but you need to get out of there

Me : I'm working on it

Asante : good because you can't be a father from prison , your kids need their father

Me : kids ?

She laughs

Me : don't tease me

Asante : I keep hearing two heartbeats combined with yours

Me : no ways

Asante : yes ways , I'm certain that you have twins coming

I chuckle

Asante : now get out of there , and Ty still needs you

Me : noted

If I lacked any reason to be out of jail , now I have it

.

.

.

INSERT 29

Asavela

I can't keep going on like this , I'm writing June exams in a few days

That's why I've decided to put this out , so I can move on with my life

That's if that's possible , but I'll never know unless I try

Mom : after disappearing for days you call us here why ?

Call them ? Just asking for a simple meeting with parents it's called this now

Dad : please I hope there won't be any fights here today

Me : I'm not here to fight tata , but just to talk (dad)

Dad : okay and you have the time to do so

Me : firstly ma let me just say I did not disappear, I did say that I'm moving out and that's what I did

Mom : whatever you say

This woman is something else

Me : okay , so I just have a question . Why wasn't I told that Royalty is my sister ?

It goes completely quiet for a while , and my mother tries to walk away

I don't understand her anger right now , shouldn't we talk about it and move it out of the way

Dad : sit down

His tone and voice has changed , and it's not pleasing at all

Dad : where did you hear this ?

Me : from you two

Dad : you weren't supposed to find out like that

Me : or maybe I was just never meant to find out

Dad : your mother had a child before we met ,
but under certain circumstances she had to give
her up

Why isn't she the one telling me all of this ? Why
is she so quite like this , like this is not about her?

Me : so you weren't married then ?

She chuckles

Mom : you think I cheated on your father ? That's
why you have so much disrespect towards me

Me : there's no disrespect ma , I'm just asking a
simple question . One that needs a yes or no

Mom : and what do you call this ?

Black parents will always see expression of feelings , as disrespect

Dad : we were not married we didn't even know each other then on a personal note that is . Your mother was involved with a prince , she had no idea he was royalty . She fell pregnant with Royalty only to find out the prince is married .

Me : what ?

Mom : don't what , you asked questions now you're going to get your answers

She's volatile right now , but the shock in me
I can't believe this at all

Dad : as I was saying , the prince was married to
Royalty's mother . Like any other woman she
wasn't pleased to find out there's an outside
child, and to hide the shame your mother had to
give her baby to the wife . Only soon after the
prince died , and she disappeared with the baby .
It was years later we have met and got married
and had you , that we found out where she was
with the child . She had gotten married , with
another man .

Me : let me understand this , Royalty is of a royal
family and both Mr and Mrs Mofokeng are not her
parents

Mom : and the genius gets it

Me : well mom the genius is not the one who gave her baby up , and didn't even have the guts to take her back . Living 4 streets down to yours , suffering and being treated like the outsider she is . Working behind the bar while studying , slaving off to support a grown man and woman with their child and granddaughter . While you just stood by and watched all of that

She slaps me , and it's the first my father holds her but it's done

Me : I don't care beat me if it'll make you feel like a woman and mother enough , because you failed

Mom : I am still your mother

Me : and the same way you always compared me to Royalty , wishing you had a better daughter than me . I so wish I can find a better mother than you

I get up grab my bag

Dad : Asavela

Me : I'm so done with this dad

I leave , feeling like crap .

.

.

.

Royalty

This house is lonely , like way too lonely . I've resorted to sleeping with Tyler in his room , he doesn't mind it

I think we're both lonely without Africa here , a week without him and it's hell

I don't understand how twisted I am , to have fallen so hard for a man keeping me hostage

Love is twisted and messed up , and I'm experiencing that first hand

My boy walks in from school , he just throws himself on me . And he looks so tired , I don't get how a 6 year old gets tired

Maybe he's just bored , or something is bothering him and he's not happy

Me : hey

Tyler : hi mommy

Me : long day ?

Tyler : yeah , dad not home yet ?

Africa will lead and send me to an early grave

Me : no

I say that with a heavy sigh

Tyler : you miss him

Me : I wish I didn't , but I do

Okay I shouldn't have said that to him , but he laughs

Me : what ?

Tyler : daddy loves you mommy but he frustrates you

I laugh

Me : you're too good for your own age

Tyler : I'm just smart

Me : now that you are , and you're right daddy frustrates me

Tyler : I don't like it when he leaves

What child would like it when their parents leave?

Tyler : but I know he has to work

A child this young shouldn't have to be concerned about such things

Me : when he comes back he will spend time with you

Tyler : and you too , we miss him both

Me : we sure do

We stay in silence for a bit , and my stomach
start grumbling

These pills make me eat and it's crazy , I'm
always eating but never full

Tyler : let me go have a talk with Walter

I laugh he slides off the couch going into the
kitchen . This boy fills a whole in my life I never
even knew I had

.

.

Africa

Being kept in custody all week , now that was fun

I'm supposed to be in court , that was two hours ago but no one has come to pick me up

After an hour of being alone again the door open, Nqaba walks in

Me : about damn time

Nqaba : the payment in my account , makes this damn worth it . Because I did nothing , I just had to stand in front of a corrupt judge . That's under

your payment by the way , and I spoke nonsense. Case was thrown out

I get up

Me : for some reason , I find myself looking Menzi right now

Nqaba : there are no refunds

I laugh

Me : Bangani you love money and that's fine

Nqaba : we'll stay out of trouble if you can , I doubt that's possible

I nod

Nqaba : need me to drop you off ?

Me : you expect me to hitch hike ?

He laughs

Nqaba : I got your things , so you're free to go

Me : that's all I need to hear

We walk out and I hope to never set foot , in this place again

.

.

Royalty

I'm woken up , when someone picks me up from the bed . His scent graces me

Africa : don't freak out it's me

I open my eyes and it's really him , he's home how nice . I should be happy , but just seeing him I get annoyed

Me : put me down

Africa : let's go to bed

Me : no , I'm fine I was already in bed

Africa : I need you next to me.

Me : you were without me for a whole week

Africa : which is why I need you now

Me : just....

Africa : we'll wake up

He carries me to our room , I feel like dying

Me : I hate you

Africa : I love you

He says leaning down , capturing my lips . And I
kiss him back , but I want to push him off so bad .
Something is wrong with me

Africa : why are you so resistant ?

He pulls out of the kiss

Me : you need to go cleanse

Africa : not this shit again , I'm not fucking dating
a Sangoma . For God's sake , I just got out of
police custody

Me : which is exactly why you need to cleanse ,
to get rid of the jail omen

Africa : mommy I was not in jail , it's custody

Me : daddy I don't care

He groans frustrated

Me : now you get a piece of how you frustrate me

Africa : I don't need this , first I was made to steam , now I have to cleanse . What's next ?

Me : keep doing your bad things and then we'll see what's next

He sighs , tying his dreadlocks

Africa : and how do I do this cleansing ?

Me : for find a river , stream or waterfall . Better yet go to the ocean

Africa : are you for real ?

Me : as real as it gets

I'm not even a traditional person , I have no belief whatsoever

I don't believe in God , I don't believe in ancestors . I'm just me , so all this is making me see that something is really wrong with me

Africa

So this morning I had to wake you just before 05:00 and go cleanse , how crazy is that ?

The things we do for love , and I don't even get why the fuss with all of these

But now I came back to shock , she has a bag packed because she's leaving

I actually think , this pregnancy is driving her crazy this early . At just 5 weeks . By the time she's 9 months I'll be crazy , and definitely out of my mind

Me : this is some bad joke ?

Royalty : no , I'm leaving

Me : and going where ? I thought I made it clear that you're not going anywhere

Royalty : oh trust me , I got that loud and clear . But I need my space away from you . First your men kidnapped me , kept me hostage for a week. You shot me and still kept me prisoner in your own house . You got me to fall in love with you , yet you treat me like dirt . Yet you say you love me ? And to make matters worse , you just went and married me off to yourself . Without even telling me or talking to me . I can't do this

Me : you can't do what ?

Royalty : this

She points to us with her hand

Me : you're not breaking up with me

She laughs annoyed , and she's getting upset it's worrying me a bit

Because of the twins , I can't have her stressed .
It might make her lose the babies

Me : so where are you going ?

Royalty : I don't know , you my capture so you tell me . As long as it's far from you

Me : you'll go to a hotel , but just so you know I'll have guys there with you 24/7

Royalty : I don't care , I'm going to say goodbye to Tyler

She walks out , I'm never doing anything right with her

Maybe it should all start with taking what belongs to me

I call Simo , he's the only one I can trust to be with her

I walk out and find her hugging with Tyler

Tyler : mommy how long will you be gone ?

Royalty : just a week baby

My boy is sad , and it's all my fault . I have to make things right and fix this

As much as I can't loose her , Tyler has found a mother in her . And so he can't loose her as well

Tyler : okay I love you

Royalty : and I love you baby

Me : can I take you ?

Royalty : no , I'll rather you don't

It feels like I'm loosing a part of me watching her walk out of the door

Me : she'll be back right ?

He walks to me

Tyler : daddy a week is 5 or 7 days ?

I hold his hand and chuckle

Me : I don't know young champ

He sighs

Tyler : I hope it's 5 days , I'm going to miss
mommy

Me : me too

Tyler : yeah , she was missing you too

I hope he's telling the truth , and that my actions
haven't cost me her love

.

.

.

INSERT 30

Sky

The drama surrounding this Royalty , it's too
much even for me

I don't know even whether to tell Africa all this
Asavela just told me or just keep my mouth shut

But here I am in his house , baby sitting Tyler .
The young champ didn't go to school today
because he's sick

Tyler : why are you looking at me like that ?

I hope and pray my daughter doesn't grow up to
have such a mouth

Me : you don't look sick to me

Tyler : uncle your eyes are not okay

He says laughing , and Tyler never talks
laughing. Unless he's telling a joke , or he's
amused or lying

Me : you're lying

Tyler : no , I'm not

Me : then what's wrong with you ? And why didn't you agree to go see a doctor ?

Tyler : I'm sick inside

Me : inside ?

Tyler : yeah , my heart

I chuckle

Me : what do you know about girls you are only 6 Ty?

Tyler : it's not girls , it's mommy I miss her

Mommy ? How can he miss someone he doesn't even know ?

Me : young champ ...

Tyler : I know she will be back in a week , but I don't know how long a week is .

I don't think even Royalty's identity confuses me this much

His mother is dead , I was there when Africa killed her . I saw all of it so what's this now ?

Tyler : it's boring here without her , Walter doesn't even cook much anymore . There's no one who eats two plates at once

This boy is losing his mind , this is an emergency a whole fucking disaster

Me : young champ , I need to call daddy okay

Tyler : okay

He looks fine but something is wrong with him , I call Africa his phone rings answered for the first few times , he eventually answers

Africa : this better be fucking important

Me : your son is not okay

Africa : what's wrong with him ?

Me : he's busy talking about mommy , how he misses her and she'll be back in a week . Walter doesn't cook much lately , heh monna come back and deal with your son

Africa : you called me for that nonsense ?

Nonsense , did he hear anything I've just said ?

Me : I just said...

Africa : and she's not talking about his ghost mother

Me : then....

Africa : Sky don't call me again , I'm not your baby mama

He drops the call on me

Me : this family is crazy even the baby has joined in

He needs to get back soon , so I can go back to my house . Baby sitting Tyler used to be so fun , not this creepy

.

.

.

Africa

Jay : is that boy okay ?

Me : you're asking me

He laughs

Me : is she okay ?

Jay : yeah I was there last night

Me : make sure she doesn't even leave

Jay : Simo won't let her out of his sight

I'm so against this hotel business , but for the sake of saving our relationship and making sure that babies are fine

If it means she has to stay at a hotel for a few days , then so be it

Jay : you don't think she'll run away now , do you?

Me : that's my wife we talking about , why would she run away ?

They might be my guys but they don't need to know anything personal about my life

He has no reason to know that there's that fear ,
of her escaping

Jay : then why so much protection ?

Me : she's my wife stop being a dumbass

He laughs

Jay : fine , fine but I doubt anyone would go after
anything that's yours

Me : I can't take chances

Jay : understood but the guys are good for it

They better be

.

.

.

Royalty

Just two days alone , and I want to go back . It's not a laughing matter . Now I feel like an idiot , because I even miss that Africa of mine

I walk in the lounge , he booked me a whole presidential room

And this scary Simo is here , I wonder where did they find him . Sky is not this scary

Me : I need to talk to Africa

Simo : you can't

He's not serious , I have no phone if I had I would have called him myself

Me : what , why ?

Simo : he's busy

Me : but....

Simo : you can't talk to him okay

He gets up and walks out locking me in . I know I said I don't care but this

Voice : he's just as miserable where he is

I turn and scream my lungs out , who is this woman and how did she get in here ?

Whoa she doesn't even look human , Simo walks in right back running

Simo : Mrs Oceans what's...

I stop him with my hand , I put another hand on my mouth

I can't say there's a woman in here , I'm sure this guy doesn't see her

Simo : mam ...

Me : don't call me that get out

I shout at him

Simo : maybe I should call....

Me : what ? So he's not busy now ?

My voice gets aggressive , poor guy walks out

Me : who are you ?

Her : calm down , you'll hurt yourself and the babies

Babies ?

Me : what babies ?

Her : the ones you're pregnant with

What a shocker , she's a ghost and I'm talking to a ghost

Her : I'm not a ghost

Me : there's no way you're human

She walks towards me I move back

Me : don't come anywhere near me

That's aggressive

Her : okay but calm down

She sits down on the couch , talk about a ghost
with class

Her : I'm not a ghost

She can read my mind , of course she's a ghost
she can

Me : but you're dead

Her : yes

Me : so you're...

Her : a spirit Royalty

Me : you know my name ?

She smiles , what a beautiful woman

Her : of course you're my daughter in-law , even
do things weren't done right I still recognise you

Daughter in-law

Me : you're...his mother ?

Her : yes I am , now sit down we have lost to talk about

Me : with all due respect , I don't think this is even normal

Her : why ?

Me : what's normal about talking to a gho...spirit?

Her : you're gifted and unique , your normality is not that of others

I must be really bewitched

Her : this is not witchcraft , it's a gift from God as your ancestors

Me : the two people I don't even believe in ? And what gift is this ? Because the people of God would say it's demonic

Her : God may have created people , and it's not his fault that his followers choose to be judgemental about it . And read the Bible in a way that it suits them , and yet condemns others

Now she has my attention I sit down opposite her

Me : why am I seeing you , like what do you want?

Her : just to talk , and for us to have our first encounter . So that when the next one happens , you don't get freaked out

Me : believe me you , I'm very freaked out right now

Her : Royalty you know how to control your emotions very well

Me : yeah well , I learnt that very young

Her : I know , which is why you're the only woman who can fall in love with a man who captured her

Me : he did not capture me his men did not him

She laughs

Her : you're defending his actions in front of me ,
yet you always wonder and think about them

That's my business and not hers

Her : take care of my grandkids all three of them ,
and remember I'm always with you at all time

Just like that she's gone , and it's like she wasn't
even here

Me : Africa needs to save me from his ghost
mother

But his ugly guy doesn't want me talking to him

.

.

.

Langa

The doctor came through , and he can do the procedure but he had to wait until my legs have got feeling

That can be a while , before all that happens . I'm just pleased that there's light somewhere

It's making me dig even in my investments , and money I vowed to never touch

That was specifically set and put aside for my son , when he grows up

But I'll rather fix myself right now , and go back to my family

I'll work my ass off , to repay the money back .
Because it's not mine to even use

Sky : excited to leave ?

Me : Jali you're aware that we're not friends right?

He laughs

Sky : of course not , I just think you get lonely in here

Me : oh no I don't , but I'm sure Kevin can use some of your nice company

Sky : oh no , see Jayden ate him alive

That monster

Me : I must count my lucky stars that I'm still alive

Sky : Oceans site saved you

As much as he messed me up , he spared me

Me : I'm just glad that I'm getting a second chance

Sky : second chances right ? They come rarely
and when given be sure to use them wisely , next
time you won't be so lucky

I know I won't be as luck , even now this is just a
pure miracle

.

.

.

Africa

I walk in the bedroom and she's just coming out
of the shower

Me : mommy

She doesn't even give me a smile

Me : I miss you

Royalty : so now I'm not allowed to see you , nor call you ?

Me : of course you can see me , and Simo is here to give his phone whenever you want to call me

Royalty : I asked yesterday and he said you're busy

Me : that idiot , I can never be too busy for my wife

Royalty : some wife I am , I want to see my son

Me : mommy , are you aware that you're near the edge of driving me insane ?

She drops the towel and lotions , my dick is throbbing a nigga is hungry

Me : can I help you with that ?

Royalty : I said I want to see my son

Me : then come back home

I take the lotion from her

Royalty : no , I said I want to be away from you

Yet here I am

Me : you want me to bring him here ?

Royalty : get me a phone so I can call him

Me : this is just you trying to provoke me right ?

Royalty : provoke really ?

Me : you want me to get you a phone ?

Royalty : I'm your wife Africa , not your slave or prisoner or whatever . I'm your wife Royalty Oceans , get that through your head . And while you're still on it , get me a ring . You said you like it , so put a ring on it

She's shouting at me , and she's angry but so damn cute . Not to mention how hard she's getting me right now , she's a fucking turn on

She takes the lotion away from me , I won't even blame any of this on the pregnancy

I think she's just always been this strong willed , a woman with her own mind and opinions

Me : I got the ring

I reach for my pocket and take it out , I've had it since I got out

Me : here let me see , I think it's the perfect size

I take her hand and put it on , it fits but it could do with a bit of resizing

Royalty : it's big was it even for me

Me : mommy it's not big , and stop . I'm married to you so who else would I buy the ring for , except for you ?

Royalty : you tell me , you had a change of clothes even in jail . That I never even brought for you

Me : that....Nqaba came with that from Sky . I can even call them right now

Royalty : it's fine leave it

Damn this woman loves me , and she's jealous

Me : forgive me for getting you a big ring , I'll have it resized okay ?

She nods

Me : and I'll get you a phone , but don't use it to....

Royalty : just trust me Africa , I don't even...

Me : can you just say daddy

It's become so sweet when she says daddy . I know that's Tyler's thing , but we can borrow it

I say brushing her tummy , and she realises

Royalty : I won't call you daddy , and what are you doing ?

Me : uhm

She said we shouldn't think about kids when she found out she was positive

Now how do I tell her this ? What if she wants to abort ?

I'm excited to be a father all over again , and this time I plan to do things differently

With my wife together , I want to be here through and through . Which is why I'm thinking of taking this life changing big decision

Royalty : so you know you left your sperms inside of me ?

That's so disgusting

Me : they're kids and how do you know that ?

Royalty : don't call me crazy

Me : I can never call crazy mommy

Royalty : your gho.... Spirit mother came here and she told me

I didn't get any of that

Me : my what ?

Royalty : your mother

Me : my mother is dead

Royalty : yes and she's a spirit and not a ghost ,
so she was here yesterday . And she told me
how I'm pregnant with twins

Me : she did , didn't she ?

Why do I have such a calm wife ? Who seems
like she can control everything

Me : are you still sure you have no gift ?

Royalty : your spirit mother says I do , from God
and ancestors imagine that

She laughs walking to the wardrobe

Me : and you don't think so ?

She can communicate with spirit , coming from
Batlokoa . Having a sister like Asante nothing
scares not surprises me

I think I need to get a hold of either of those Isilo
people

Maybe one of them can tell me what's happening
clearly with my wife

.

.

.

INSERT 31

Africa

I spent the night , and was given so much love
during the night

I don't even want to leave , but I want her to
come back home

She looks at me with begging eyes , and I'm not
giving in

Royalty : but...

I thrust in deeper slowly , she clings on my back

Royalty : I...

Me : shhhhhh

I capture her lips into mine we kiss , taking slowly deep thrusts . She rubs her one leg over my ass down to my thigh

She welcomes me , parting her legs further .

Me : come home

I pull out of the kiss , we lock eyes

Me : please

Royalty : you need to chance how....you treat me honestly

Me : I will

Her walls close in , I take deeper thrusts picking up my pace . She's tired , I can't drain her more

Me : I love you

She holds tight on me as she orgasms , moaning my name softly

My dick tightens , it brings her a bit of pain . She moves up , and I cum taking my dick out of her coochie

Me : shit , that's our kids wasted

She pushes me off of her

Royalty : you already left two inside

Me : mare motho wame (but my person)

She takes a few minutes to calm down and gets off the bed

Me : Oya Kae ? (Where are you going)

Royalty : to bath

Me : am I that stinky ?

Royalty : what are you talking about ?

Me : we just made love and you're going to bath?

Royalty : you're leaving

Me : I am ?

Royalty : you plan to stay here ?

Me : mommy , I thought we're going back home

Royalty : what made you thought that ?

I have seriously met my match here

Me : but we just spoke about it

Royalty : and I said change , how you treat me

Me : and I said I will mommy

Royalty : don't keep me prisoner here , tell these men of yours to leave . I'll come home in two days , and get me that phone

Me : I'll bring the phone

Royalty : no send someone to bring it

Me : you really don't want to see me ?

She says nothing

Me : okay , but I'll leave the guys watching you . I need you to be safe

She goes to take her showers , and I order the phone .

I should leave as well , Tyler is with Sky . He's spending the night at his place

When she's done she finds me dressed already , ready to leave

Me : I want to take you to KZN when you come back

Royalty : why do you want to make things worse for me ?

Me : what ?

Royalty : you can't take me to KZN , before taking me to your maternal home . Your father might have married your mother , but he did not do accordingly for you . You are a Batlokoa before you're a Manzini

I have no idea of what she's talking about right now

Me : so you saying I have to take you to Botswana first

Royalty : we understand each other

I'm being dished today

Me : okay , I love you

Royalty : I love you

I better get my shit together , I guess we have a trip to Botswana . Before heading to Manzini

.

.

.

Sky

Africa called us , and it's rare for him to call the guys . It's always them asking for him

Peace : what is going on ?

Me : what makes you think I know ?

Clive : because you're his right hand

Me : actually no , I am not

Clive : surely you know why he called us here

Me : I don't

Peace : and where is Kevin ? He seems to have just disappeared

Me : I'm not his keeper

Clive : I wouldn't be surprised if he's dead , you don't suspect Oceans like that

Me : what are you trying to say ?

Clive : we were here .m, we all heard it . He thought Oceans might be the one who took the girls

Me : oh that , and what do you think Clive ?

He looks behind me , facial expression has changed

Clive : I think nothing

Africa : thought as much

He grabs the seat , next to me and sits down

Africa : I'm getting out

Even I'm shocked , I know nothing about this .
Where does it even come from ?

But I will not question him in front of these guys ,
that would come across as disrespect

Africa : this is no gang , no blood will be spilled out . I just want out and that's it

Gangsters we are far from being that

Peace : why ?

Africa : I owe no one any explanation

Clive : but this is so sudden , and business was going well

Africa : and it can continue to , just without me .

He gets up

Africa : now be warned , if any of you comes after me I'll forget that I'm out

He walks out

Peace : couldn't you at least warm us ?

Me : Oceans is a fucking grown ass man , he doesn't answer to anyone . And I'm in no position to change his mind whatsoever

My only worry and concern is where does all this leave me ?

.

.

.

Africa

Sometimes to keep what you have , you have to loose some

And this is me , keeping my wife and kids .
Choosing to loose a business that makes me millions . She might never have said it , but I know she doesn't approve of what I do

That's how I got her , and for me to keep her I need this change . This is the life changing decision , I've been debating about for a while now

I'm loosing a part of me that's been there for years , for something that's been around for only a few months

But it's fucking worth it , the change that mommy brought into my life

And the life of my son , I want to keep it . Her going to be at the hotel this week

Only showed me how much I want to be on the right path , just for her

I know she will acknowledge this , it will not be in vain

I'll do things right , I'll send a delegation to her family . I'll pay damages for the twins , I'll go pay bride price .

I'll take her to my maternal home , have her introduced and welcomed in the right way

When all of that is done , I'll take her to Manzini .
I'll reclaim my throne back from whoever sits on it

And all of that came with this sacrifice , money is
not a problem . It's not like I'm lacking it , and I'll
still make it . Using other means and different
methods

I take my phone out and call Sky , he answers

Me : I'm not your baby mama don't make me wait
like this for you

He laughs , I drop the call . Minutes later he
comes out

Sky : I thought you left

Me : get in the car

We both get in my car , I drive out to Camps Bay
at the new house right by the ocean coast

Sky : what's this ?

Me : this is where I'm moving my family

Sky : you're moving from the estate ?

Me : yeah , leaving the life of crime means now
coming to live like a civilized civilian

Sky : why the change ?

I know he has a lot of questions

Me : it has always been me and my parents they dies , it was me and Dante he's halfway across the world . The it was me and Tyler , Asante came along . But she's married with her own family , I can't really rely much on her . Now we have expanded that little family , and I'd like to keep it like that

Sky : expanded ?

Me : my wife is pregnant , she and our...

Sky : you really married her ?

I chuckle

Me : yeah I did

Sky : this must be love

Me : it sure is

He laughs

Sky : never thought I'll see the day

Me : it's here and it's happening

We walk outside of the house

Me : I owed you this much to explain to you ,
you're my best man you know that . But I want

you to make a choice on your own , whether you
stick around or you walk out let that be on you .
And only because you feel and want to , not for
my sake

Sky : I go where you go

We laugh

Me : bare in mind , I'm just leaving the trafficking.
Everything else remains as it is

Sky : then I'm where you are

I nod

Sky : now it makes sense , why Tyler said he misses mommy . I've never felt like such an idiot

I laugh

Me : she's not happy with me , so she's at the hotel

Sky : and you only agreed because she's pregnant right ?

Me : you know me too well

I hope this is the start of a new beginning to me and my family

.

.

.

Royalty

See how cute Africa is trying to be , he left only have 4 guys watching me . With Simo still around He had a full body massage organised for me , a pedicure and manicure . A facial and wax treatment

That did me good , it was truly amazing . He even bought a bouquet of white roses

And a romantic dinner for three , with his babies included . That was so cute and insane at the same time

But I so appreciated his efforts , and my ring is resized . It fits me perfectly now

And he had the phone delivered , with his number along . First thing I did was just to FaceTime my son , I feel so bad that I've left him I've been so selfish leaving him , because of things he has nothing to do with

I was angry with his father and not him , but he got affected

And I never want to put our kids , through anything like this ever again

Tyler : I miss you mommy

Me : I know , and guess what ?

Tyler : you miss me more

I laugh

Me : yes but I'm coming home

He screams laughing , makes my heart melt

Africa : Ty tone it down

He sounds so grumpy

Tyler : sorry daddy

Africa : okay champ

Tyler : see mommy , we're going to a new house.
Daddy said we're moving

Africa : you don't know how to keep your mouth
shut

Sounds like he's walking away , I can't see him

Tyler : okay sorry , he said it's a surprise

Me : I hate surprises

He laughs

Tyler : mommy maybe that's why I ruined it

Me : you did good , now I can't wait to see you

Tyler : I'm happy now

Me : me too , I love you okay

Tyler : I love you mommy

Me : okay baby , give daddy the phone

Tyler : okay hold on

He goes to the lounge , and Africa is sleeping he wakes him up

Me : why are you sleeping during the day ? What were you doing ?

Africa : not cheating on you that's what

I'm crazy , I'm the one who left . But I still want to be there

Me : why don't I know , you're moving ? Am I being left out

Africa : how can the woman of the house be left out ?

He's not even looking at me , his eyes are shut closed

Me : were you drinking ?

Africa : just a bit

I laugh , he opens his eyes slowly . And I'm like
lord this man you gave me is everything

The beauty , the brains the charm . The
arrogance the sweetness and danger . He's a
whole full package

Me : get ready to throw all of that out

Africa : what ?

Me : uzoghabha (you're going to vomit)

Africa : why must you always do those disgusting things on me ?

I don't know either , but I'm loving it

Me : why must you always go out of way

Africa : I just drank a bit

Me : yet you look like that ?

Africa : I'll be fine when you arrive

Me : you have an hour to come pick me up

He sits up in high speed , I laugh

Africa : for real ?

Me : what ?

Africa : you want me....never mind I'm coming to pick you up

Me : okay

Africa : thank you for coming home

Me : I hope things are changing now

Africa : mommy they are

Me : okay baby daddy

He burst out laughing , his dreadlocks hide his face

Africa : you sure hate me this much ?

Me : you're my baby daddy , that's not a lie

Africa : I'm also your husband

Me : I like baby daddy better

Africa : okay baby mama

Me : see how cute that is

He removes his dreadlocks , exposing his face

Africa : I am cute it's not even debatable

I laugh

Me : I wasn't talking about you

Africa : you're talking to me

I got dealt , but it's fine

Africa : let me come fetch you

Me : drive safe

Africa : I'm not drunk

Me : you're telling me

We say goodbye , and only now I'm going to start packing my clothes

I wasn't intending of leaving today

.

.

.

Africa

We are to move to the new house tomorrow , my wife still hasn't seen it

And we haven't had time to talk about it ,
because Tyler is baby not letting go of her

We're just happy to have her back home , so I'll just let him be the baby and sulk it's fine

They're in his room , cuddling right now . While I'm in our room all by myself cold

I could use some cuddles as well , but I don't want to seem jealous even though I am a bit

I call Nqabayomzi , I was talking to my sister earlier on . And she said he can help me with my problem

Nqaba : Oceans

Me : Bangani

Nqaba : I know you're not in trouble

Me : of course not , it's way too soon

He chuckles

Nqaba : so let's hear it

Me : my wife has this strange thing , I don't know what to call it . Because she refuses that she has a gift , but she's been able to see me on two

occasions doing things . And just recently she said she was talking to my mother

Nqaba : what's the worry ?

Me : I need to know what this is . I'm not scared much , my sister is gifted . I just want clarity on her

Nqaba : well she has a gift of communicating with spirit , and you can relax she's not a sangoma like me nor anything like your sister

Me : okay , so what's hers ?

Nqaba : she's a psychic medium

Me : isn't that a white people thing ?

He laughs

Nqaba : no , we had our kind people who are mediums . And hers is also ancestral in a way

That's why she always makes me do these crazy things

Me : how so ?

Nqaba : that's for her to find out , and she's soon to . Just always listen to your wife , she'll be with you through everything . And you'll achieve whatever you set your mind on , with her by your side . Even if she doesn't make sense , just listen

to her . And always do what she says or asks ,
she'll never lead you astray

Me : okay , okay Bangani I heard you . And I
wasn't needing a reading

Nqaba : I'm a sangoma , I do consultations . Your
wife is a medium she communicates and sees
spirit , she's the one who does reading

Me : okay , this is going to be fine

He laughs , hanging up the phone . He sure
answered me , even though I'm not that clued up
about mediums

And I just had to fall in love with such a person

.

.

.

INSERT 32

Royalty

The house in camps bay us even bigger than the one back at the estate

We just moved in , and I'm grateful that I don't have any work to do

I'm too lazy , not blaming anything . It's just me being my lazy self nothing much to it

I've gathered that Africa has money , and lots of it . But he's one strange man . He doesn't live the lavish lifestyle , flashy cars , expensive clothes all of that you name it

He's just living one normal life , that just suggest , he's not of the lower nor the middle class

But he doesn't flaunt money , even Tyler knows to get something he has to do something for it

Get a certain percent at school , do certain chores at home . Ask nicely from daddy and not demand

That's the most thing I admire about my husband, his standards of living

Tyler : mommy you see how big my room is ?

Me : and you have a big boys bed ?

He laughs

Tyler : daddy did well

Me : he sure did , but now you have to finish packing your toys

Tyler : must I ?

Africa : Ty get to it

My boy sulks going back to his room

Africa : don't even give me that look

Me : but....

Africa : I don't want to hear it

Me : he could have done it latter though

Africa : what later is later than this late ?

I laugh

Me : that doesn't even make sense

Africa : because you don't want it to make sense

Me : I'll go help him

Africa : suit yourself

Me : you're not even feeling for me ?

Africa : you want to slave yourself , so go ahead .
Why should I feel bad ?

Me : don't you....

Africa : don't even dare

Me : but...

Africa : Ga ke nyake go utlwa (I don't wanna hear)

Me : I still love you

He smiles

Africa : now I love you right back

Of course he does

.

.

.

Africa

I called my sister and was she damn pleased ,
that now I want to do things right . I haven't told
my wife though , after I hear what they say back
at home

I'll sit her down and we'll talk . Hopefully she will
agree and have no problem with going now

I want this done soon , so we can move on with
our life

I don't know how she'll feel about moving to KZN,
but I'm crossing fingers that with time

She will agree , and adapt to our new
environment and having to be queen then

Motlokoa : when were you thinking of coming ?

Me : very soon

Motlokoa : that is great , well how about we have a small ceremony to welcome our daughter in-law ?

Me : I don't know if we can do that , before going to her family

That's another thing I don't even know how to break to her , that I want to do

She went missing for months , and comes back pregnant and married

It also scares the shit out of me , that she will have to go back home . Pregnant or not , Royalty is not the kind of woman to depend on a man

She can still decide to leave me , never come back . And raise the twins alone without me

I don't doubt she loves me , but we also didn't fall in love under normal circumstances

And I can't manipulate her with the motherly love she holds for Tyler

I can't help but question , will she choose to stay with us after going back home

Motlokoa : but surely something small won't hurt

Me : talk to the elders , let's hear what they say first

Motlokoa : I will do that , and we can't wait to see you

Me : same here , it's been a while .

I haven't gone to Botswana in a few years . Only because I've just been way too busy , but now I'm getting it

One can never be too busy for family , no matter what

.

.

.

Asavela

I'm done holding on to the past , and dwelling on things that don't concern me

My relationship with my family is a bit starved right now , but I'll give them their space

Until they're ready to include me back again , for now I'm letting them be

And I'm moving on with my life , I can't put my life on hold

If it happens that one day Royalty comes back , I pray she finds out the truth . More importantly I

pray , we build on the friendship we had and we
find each other as sisters

I'm at the bar where she used to work , and I'm
sad . So sad worst than the day she went
missing

I feel like I'm closing a chapter of our life
together, I hate this feeling

But being here for the last time , is me saying
goodbye to the hurt and pain . The tears shed
after she left

Me : dear friend / sister I hope you live where you
are

I raise the glass , and down the whiskey . It's the first time I'm drinking after meeting with Sky

He'll kill me if he finds out I'm at a bar , drinking

Barman : what are we celebrating ?

I laugh , these people are a whole vibe . They always poke their noses in other people's business

But you know what ? You come to the bar emotions all over the place

And when you leave all is well , and you're a better person . All thanks to these people behind the bars

Me : saying goodbye

Barman : sad memories ?

Me : both sad and good

Barman : ah all the more reason , for a drink in the house

Me : I won't say no to that

Barman : you're not driving ?

Me : no I'm safe

Barman : alright

He serves me glass , and indeed I'm saying
goodbye

.

.

.

Sky

Emihle spent the weekend around , her mother
found work .

So she now lives at her grandparents , I just
decided to take her for the weekend

I didn't talk much with my woman , knowing
school has her busy

But then I'm also very much aware that she was
busy drinking at a bar last night

When you're a man like me , you make sure that
you're watching your woman at all times

And it's not even about bad things , or trying to
control her . It's about making sure she's safe at
all times

I even have people watching , Tumi and Emihle .
All these women are important to my life

I just called her right now , and she sounds like
crap . I'm glad it's a voice call . I don't have to
see her face , I'm sure she looks worse

Me : what's going on ?

Asa : don't be angry

Me : talk and then I'll decide

Asa : babe I went out last night

Me : okay

Asa : and...and well you see I...I was...uhm....I was drinking it wasn't a lot but...

Me : you were drinking at a bar at night , why again my love ?

Asa : you know ?

Me : know what ?

Asa : that I was at a bar

Me : yes I know so what ?

Asa : babe I did not tell you that

Me : of course you didn't

Asa : wait , do you have people watching me ?

Me : I do

Asa : wow Sky....

Me : don't raise your voice at me , I'm not your friend

She goes quite for a bit

Asa : I'm sorry

Me : I have people watching you for your own safety , and making sure that Sizwe stays the hell away from you

Asa : okay baby , I'm sorry . You just scared me I thought maybe you don't trust me

Me : there's no such thing as that my love

Asa : okay babe , I'm sorry I was just letting go of the whole thing ka Royalty

Oh that

Me : letting go ?

Asa : she's gone babe , and I can't put my life on hold forever . She's my sister I can't change that , but life has to go on right

Me : it sure does babe

She's right about that , and I'm glad we're both making peace with what we lost . I had a meeting

with the guys , and we're a bit sad to be moving away from the trafficking

That made us money , loads and loads of money, but then without Africa we don't want to do any of it

Asa : what are your plans today ?

Me : I'll be taking Emihle back to her grandparents

Asa : okay give her a kiss from me

Me : I can use a kiss from you

She laughs

Asa : I'll take care of you soon

Me : you're spending June holidays here right ?

Asa : if you would have me babe

Me : then it's settled my love

Asa : I love you , let me wake up and clean

Me : call me later

She laughs

Asa : you're the one with money , so call me

Me : I'll tap into savings

Asa : babe yeka I'drama (stop the drama)

Me : okay ke

We hang up , and my baby here has fallen asleep right on the floor .

I guess she'll leave a bit later on , I'm not waking her up

.

.

.

Africa

I hate seeing my wife not well , like she is right now

She's scared more than anything , and I understand her fears

I just don't share the same fears as her , because I know she's okay

And the twins are okay , they have to be . And her sickness is not a danger to them

Royalty : is that ?

The doctor nods , it's the most satisfying feeling hearing the two heartbeats

Doc : now that's strong

She says smiling , we're at the doctor's to do a scan . And to check if the twins are okay

Doc : it's still to early to tell the gender , you're about 7 weeks far

Royalty : are they okay ? Considering my situation

Doc : they're prefect , I'm going to give you supplements to take along with your meds . You have nothing to worry about , keep eating healthy and staying fit .

I don't know about the fit thing , my wife sure eats for three people . And she's gaining now

Doc : that's it for today , I'll see you in three weeks

I fix my wife , we're getting three scans . One is for us , another is for Asante she asked for it

And we save the best for last , the young champ . We plan to show it to him , when we tell him that he's about to be a big brother

We take her meds and proscription we leave

Me : are you feeling better now ?

Royalty : I'm glad they're okay

Me : you have nothing to worry about

Royalty : I'll relax when they're here , and
negative

I wish she can just know she's normal , and
there's nothing different about her

She still has years to live even with her sickness ,
being positive is not a death sentence

Me : I love you , and thank you for this amazing
beautiful gift of life

She smiles

Royalty : I hope Tyler will be happy

Me : you can never know with that one

Royalty : I'm not worried though

Me : you shouldn't

I open the door for her , she gets in I go to the drivers side

Me : we need to talk , I called home a few days ago . And they're pleased that I want to bring you

Royalty : in Botswana ?

I nod

Royalty : okay , when do you want to go ?

Me : maybe this coming weekend , if it's not too soon for you

She smiles

Royalty : I know you have your own plans , so it's okay baby daddy we will go

I laugh

Me : really ?

Royalty : you're my baby daddy and that's that

Me : I give up on you

Royalty : that's too soon , and I feel for you
because you're stuck with me

I hope so , because I still have to take about
doing right to her family

.

.

.

INSERT 33

Royalty

There's nothing priceless like my husband's expression , first time hearing the twins heartbeat

That has gotten him to be a happy soul this week, he can't even hide his happiness

I love this gentle sweet and caring side , it's to show that as bad as he is not excusing his actions

But he's still human , he still loves and cares . And not afraid to show or express it . And his happiness is rubbing off on me , I'm starting to get rid of my fear

And accepting the pregnancy , and the thought of going to be a mother to infants

Hopefully they'll be good kids like Tyler is , he doesn't give me any problems . He's just a darling

Africa : why do you look so worried ? He's only 6

He won't understand , we're about to tell Tyler he's going to be a big brother

I don't know how he'll take that , he's always been the only child . And now he has to share that with two more people

He might just not like that , some people don't like sharing . As sweet and cute as he is , he might not like that he won't be the only child anymore

Tyler : mommy I'm here now

He says walking in our bedroom, we called him about 15 minutes ago . But he was busy watching tv

He politely told us he's still busy so he we have to wait until he's done

Me : thank you for coming

Africa laughs , I'm trying to be sweet as well

Me : really ?

Africa : you're exaggerating

Me : I'm being polite

Africa : yeah whatever you say mommy

Tyler : daddy that's not nice

Me : please tell him my boy

Africa : don't gang up on me

I pull Tyler onto the bed next to me

Me : so we have something to tell you

Tyler : we're not moving again right ? I love this house

Me : I love it too , and we're not moving

Tyler : okay

Africa : you see this ?

He hands him the scan , my boy just looks at it
so confused

Tyler : daddy what's this ?

Africa : mommy and daddy are having new
babies

He frowns

Me : you're going to be a big brother , to two new
babies . Your siblings

Tyler : oh

He sounds so down , I look at Africa he holds my hand . This is what I was afraid of

Me : you're not happy ?

Tyler : have I been a bad boy ?

Me : baby no

He's hurting me now , my Tyler can never be a bad boy like ever

Africa : why do you say that young champ ?

Tyler : you're buying new babies

It's hard being a parent

Tyler : why are you buying new babies then ?

Africa : don't you want to be a big brother ?
Young siblings to play with and take care of them

Tyler : why two ?

Why two vele ? I don't get it as well . Only one
would have been just fine

Africa : because they're happy that you're going
to be their big brother

We sit in silence like he's in deep thought , it's so cute and funny

Yet so scary at the same time , he can just get up and storm out . And say that he doesn't want any siblings

Tyler : they won't take mommy away from me ?

Me : no they won't

He sighs , my poor boy is overwhelmed

Tyler : okay

It's a down okay

Africa : just okay ?

Tyler : we can share mommy

How sweet

Tyler : but the babies have to know , mommy is mine first

Mommy is mine first

Me : thank you baby

Tyler : can I keep this ?

He means the scan ? It's framed nicely , talk about white people things . All Africa's doing not mine

Me : it's yours you can keep it

Tyler : okay

He slides down the bed

Tyler : now I have to grow up

He says looking at the scan and it's the most beautiful thing I've ever seen

Me : mommy loves you

Tyler : I love you too mommy , and the babies

He walks out , Africa burst laughing

Africa : a 6 year old just had us like that

Me : it's not nice to share your parents

Africa : he just doesn't want to share you , yet I'm sharing you with him

Me : you can't compare the two

Africa : it's the same thing , he's only concerned about sharing mommy . They should know mommy is his first

I don't blame my boy , he was needing a mother . And I needed a reason to keep on going

I'd love to think I became that mother to him , and he's become my reason to keep on

▪

▪

▪

Africa

Preparations to leave for Botswana are underway. We'll be leaving in two days , I hope all goes well . And that my wife is accepted

Asante : Motlokoa says you're going home ?
I'm on call with her , we haven't spoken in a while

Me : yes I'm taking my wife

Asante : I hate what you did

She bit my head off when she found out I'm married

Without telling them or even inviting them , what she hates the most is the fact that there was no wedding

Me : I'm fixing that we can just move past it ?

Asante : fine , and I'm coming with

Me : what ?

Asante : don't what me , I've already booked a flight to Joburg

Me : whoa

Asante : I'm coming with Liyana and Lumkile

My sister through

Me : shouldn't we have spoken about this first ?

Asante : what's there to take about ? You're taking my sister in-law home it's only right that I'm there . Except us tomorrow morning
With women in my life I can never win

Me : fine

Asante : I'm so excited to meet her

She's to never find out , how we met

Asante : I have a feeling she's just too great for you , and you don't even deserve her

Me : that's not a very nice thing to say

Asante : it's the truth

It sure is

Asante : you just got dealt a wonderful woman

Me : enough , I get it

She laughs

Asante : let me finish packing

Me : you're serious

Asante : alive serious as it gets

Me : wow

Asante : I love you

Me : yeah and I love you

She drops the call laughing . As if I don't have enough worries , concerning this trip

.

.

.

Royalty

Hearing that Africa's twin sister is coming here ,
has me more worried than telling Tyler he's going
to be a big brother

What if she doesn't like me ? You can never
know with sisters in-law

I was up early today doing Makoti (bride) duties ,
and for what I don't know

But something said to me since their mother is
later , Asante is like a mother in-law to me

Africa is going to go fetch them at the airport now, he's just finished getting ready

Africa : I don't like seeing you this nervous , and you have no reason to be

Me : I hope so

Africa : baby daddy has you

I laugh pecking his lips

Me : thank you

Africa : let's go , I know you're hungry

I sure am

Me : are you taking Tyler with ?

Africa : he doesn't want to leave you

Me : how sweet

We walk down , and find Sky with a deep in
thought Tyler

Sky : what did you do to the poor child

Tyler : daddy has money , I'm far from being poor

I laugh

Sky : it's a figure of speech

My son has no idea what that is

Sky : what's going on going champ ?

Tyler : mommy and daddy are buying two babies

We have really put this young man in a difficult position , judging by Sky's expression he's not shocked

Nor surprised , meaning he already knows that we're expecting

Sky : so you're not happy ?

Tyler : I have to grow up now

Poor young man

Sky : yeah that's a big responsibility

He nods like an adult it's so cute though

Sky : but don't worry , you're going to be the best big brother ever

Tyler : I'm still thinking about it

Hah , now this is a shocker . It really must be a hard thing to be the big sibling

He gets off the chair and walks to his room I think

Sky : pray and hope none of your kids turn out like that one

Me : there's nothing wrong with him

Sky : all mother's say that , even my mother said the same thing about me . Look how I turned out

Me : I'm not going to raise a woman kidnapper of a son like you two , so excuse me

Sky : you didn't tell her ?

He's shocked , I wonder what wasn't I told

Africa : whoa , we don't do that anymore , I got out of the association

Sky : we got out , so we don't kidnap anyone anymore

They look so serious , it's hard not to believe them

Me : wow that's commendable , but doesn't excuse all those women....

Africa : we always sold them and rescued them again . It wasn't always easy to rescue them , but those we managed to are now living new lives .
Everywhere across the world

Sky : yes Mrs Oceans we're not that bad

I don't know about that , their lives are still changed and will never be the same again

Africa : mommy I have to go now

Me : take him with you

They look at each other before looking at me

Sky : was nice seeing you again , and I'll be a regular from now on

I smile , they leave . The nerves kick back in again

I grab my phone , I've been debating to do this
ever since I got a phone

And I can see the number is still the same and
working , this time I brace myself and call

I know Africa trust me , or rather he's learning
and trying to show me that he does . I won't
betray him

Asa : hello ?

I clear my throat , I didn't think she'll answer

Me : it's ...it's me

She goes quite but her breathing is increasing

Me : I'm so sorry...but I didn't leave by choice . I just want you to know that I'm safe now , and I'm okay . I don't know if I'll ever see you again or what , but I love you so much . Always has and always will be

Asa : tell me where are you ?

Me : I...I can't do that

Asa : baby this is your chance to come home okay , if they kidnapped you just give me a clue I can use

She's talking to fast , I'm even missing some words

Me : calm down , I was kidnapped . But like I say
I'm okay now

Asa : babe you need to come back home , oh my
god there's so much you need to hear

Me : I'll call you okay , don't be a stranger
anymore . And help me , if you still care and love
me . Don't call the cops , don't give this number
to anyone . Can I trust you ?

Asa : Royalty...

Me : can I trust you ?

We're both crying now

Asa : yes , yes you can trust me . Can I call you though ?

Me : twice a week

Asa : this feels like a movie

I laugh through my tears

Me : I need to settle fine , then maybe the communication will improve

Asa : I love you so much , I miss you everyday and I'll pray that I get to see you one day soon

Me : one day , I have to go now

Asa : take care of yourself

Me : always and you do the same for me

Asa : if I get to see you again , I'll probably start going to church

We laugh

Me : Jesus will have to come back first , before that happens

Asa : so little faith in your sister

Me : but I still love you

Asa : and I love you more big sister

Something has changed , she's never called me big sister

Nor has she ever acknowledged that I'm older than her , maybe I'm just reading too much into this

Me : this is not goodbye

Asa : on three

We count to three and drop the call , I take a few minutes and gather myself

This might seem as betrayal to Africa , but it's not. And I'll tell him what I did

I'm hoping and trusting Asavela that she won't try to find me

That would be trouble for both for us , she just has to be grateful that I'm still alive

.

.

.

Asavela

After crying like someone has just died I gather myself , if only I could go back to my old ways

I would get a bottle of something strong right now, and just drown my sorrows

Hearing her voice after all these months , indeed God is really great

I never thought this will happen , a part of me
beloved she was no more

Only the one part believed that she's still okay ,
there's a possibility of that

And I'm glad it proved to be right , I know she
asked that I don't report this

But surely that number can be traced , and that
way I can find her

I call Sky he's the one person who can advice me
better

Sky : baby

Me : my love

Sky : you have been crying , talk to me.

Me : she's alive

Sky : who ?

I cry all over again

Me : my sister is alive

Sky : you....mean Royalty ?

Me : yes

I say even nodding

Sky : how...how do you know this

Me : she called me babe she's alive

Sky : wow , and did she say where she is ?

Me : no , I asked she wasn't so open about it but
I can trace the number and hopefully it'll lead me
to her

Sky : uhm wow

There's always something in his tone when we
talk about Royalty

Something that I can't extinguish , but as always I choose to ignore it

Me : she told me not to....

Then it hits me , what if even speaking about this right now is putting her life in danger ?

She asked me , and I gave her my word . I do want to find her yes , but not if it puts her life at risk

She's my sister , and hearing her voice made me wish she was here

I want to have her in my life , I want to have a relationship with her as a sister

Me : babe ?

Sky : my love

Me : please forget about this and promise me
you won't say a thing to anyone

Sky : you're loosing me now

Me : I'm just thankful that she's alive and okay as
she said , I don't want to endanger her life

Sky : you're letting this go ?

Me : yes I am , I was just too happy and excited

Sky : it's okay I understand

I shift the conversation from that , and talk about us

In just a week I'm going to Cape town , I'll be done with exams . We both can't wait for that
Africa

We arrive at the house , and get out of the car .
Sky didn't come back with us

Leaving the airport he went to his place . He wasn't himself , but we'll talk about that

I just didn't want to do it in front of Asante , she's too nosey for her own good

Asante : you moved ?

Me : yeah , your gossip monger didn't tell you ?
She laughs

Asante : leave my boy alone

And he's first to welcome us , running to his aunt

Liyana : Ty asiboni thina ? (Tyler doesn't see us)

I'm so not ready for her drama as well , because it never ends with her

Asante : sukhweleta Liyana (don't be jealous)

Lumkile is like the worst version of his father , he's like Mabutho . Doesn't like people much , doesn't talk much . He loves being alone

Tyler : daddy your princess is here , can I just take Lumkile outside ?

My boy , I growing up indeed

Me : of course

They walk out with his cousin , leaving Liyana with us she goes to watch TV

Asante : that boy speaks like an adult

Me : blame his grandfather for that

She rolls her eyes and I fucking hate that

Asante : don't where is she ?

Me : let me find her

I walk upstairs to our room , and she's laying down in bed

Me : mommy

She turns and looks at me

Royalty : you're back ?

I nod

Royalty : sorry I felt sleepy , when you took longer

Me : the flight delayed

Royalty : it's okay , you're here now

Me : come meet her

I know she's feeling anxious , but I've noticed she gets like this from time to time

We walk downstairs , my sister graces her with a smile . I hope that eases the anxiety

Asante : wow you're so...

Liyana gets up so fast and comes to my wife , she puts her tiny hands on her stomach

We all look at her , and she's giggling like she's playing . The twins are not yet at that stage where they can kick and it's felt

Liyana : zoba nentana makazi (you're going to have babies aunt)

See why I love this kid , she's just the sweetest .
And I'm well aware that she's gifted , one day
she'll be a queen at Batlokoa

And I have feeling we're going to have girls ,
that's why she's able to connect with them

Royalty : wow

Asante : she's too forward , I'm sorry she's still a
baby . I doubt she knows how to control her
powers and emotions as of yet

I never really told my wife any of these things , so
she's confused what my sister is talking about

Me : she's gifted

Royalty : oh that's beautiful

Asante : and so are you

Royalty : so I've heard

Asante : don't worry , you'll get the hang of it .
Every gift is beautiful in its own way

Royalty : apparently it is

They laugh , I guess now we can relax because
seems like everyone likes everyone

We'll see what tomorrow holds for us , going
home

.

.

.

INSERT 34

Sky

I'm caught in between a rock and a hard place .
Asavela revealing that Royalty called her , has
put me in a corner

Now I don't know what to do , if I say nothing to
Africa and he finds out . That man will have my
head . But what if I rush , and get ahead of
myself . Only to get Royalty in trouble ?

Just then he calls me , and by the number he's already landed in Botswana . I let it ring for a while before I answer

Me : yeah

Africa : can you not be a dick

I laugh

Me : why are you calling me ?

Africa : you going to tell me , or should I extract it out of you ?

I sigh

Me : must I now ?

Africa : you had the whole of yesterday , and you chose not to

Now I can't lie to him

Me : your wife called Asavela , right yesterday

He goes quite , and you never know with him what that means

Me : you still with me right ?

Africa : right

Me : but from what I heard , she doesn't want to leave . She wasn't making a help me call , it was just to check on her friend

And now I have to hold the whole sister thing , I can't be the one who breaks it out as well

Africa : you've been loyal

He drops the call , now I don't know what's the meaning of that

Me : fuck

I hope they can talk it out , because one thing that's not even doubtable is that they love each other

I just hope that their love is strong enough , for
Africa to overlook this

.

Africa

I'd hate to think that my wife is using my kindness
and love towards her , for sinister things

Like planning to leave , or have me somehow
pay for what I've done

Asante : what's wrong ?

She asks as we get off the car , right at the gate
at home

Me : no....

My wife screams going down on her knees , I
rush to her

She's shaking and growling in a very unsettling
matter , I've never seen anything like this

Asante : carry her in

I try to hold her , but she refuses and keeps
shaking her head

Asante : Africa

Me : take the kids away

My boy as worried as he looks , he's the one to
take his cousins inside the yard

Royalty : I can't walk in here

Her voice has changed , its masculine like that
of a man

Asante : she's in trance

These kind of things , they might not scare me .
But I'm not clued up about them

Me : what do we do?

Kwena the royal seer comes to us

Kwena : Batlokoa

Me : Kwena

Kwena : le se moatamele thata (don't crowd her)

We move back a bit

Royalty : angizongena lana mina (I won't come in here)

This is not my wife but some man that's speaking through her

Kwena : ema o tla itlhalosa (wait he'll explain himself)

I stop on my tracks

Royalty : Nkosazana ungena kanjani lana wena ,
ningingabazi mina labantu obani ? Futhi ufunani
lana ? (Princess how do you enter this place , I
don't know these people , and what do you want
here)

I look at Kwena

Kwena : ke puo ba le babedi (it's a conversation
between them two)

My question is who is this man ?

Royalty : baba ? (dad)

She poses that as a question . How can she communicate with her father in this manner ? Isn't her still alive ?

Royalty : awukwazi ukungena lana , la bantu bangaveli ekhaya ko Ngwenya oMtimande (you can't enter here , before these people come at home at the Ngwenya's)

Kwena : o tswa bokgosing (she's from royalty)

Asante : did you know this ?

I shake my head no

Kwena : we have to rectify this mistake as soon as possible

How do I even rectify something I don't even know ? This is news to me , and she never even told me that she's Royalty

Royalty : sekuze kuna bantwana ba kuleli khaya
(there's even kids of this family)

She lifts her head and looks around the yard , but she's so out of it

Royalty : ngenqa yabo uzongena bakubone ,
bakufake emanzini . Kodwa ubusuku bodwa nje
uzolala lana , uhambe kusasa . (Because of them
you will go in , so they'll see you and take you
into the water . But you'll only sleep one night
here , and leave tomorrow)

Whoever this is , is not to be messed with . This voice is aggressive , hostile and arrogant

Royalty : lethani ikhandlela , amanzi womfula kanye ne tswai (bring a candle , water from the river and salt)

Do you see Kwená running back inside probably to get those things

We're just left here shocked as to what's this ?
What's happening

Asante : wow

She says it as a whisper

Me : you can say that again

Asante : her ancestors don't play , and it's nothing like ours . I've never seen anything like this

Me : what....

Kwena comes back with the things , she lights the candle . Pour the salt in the water , she drinks all of it

Only to get up and spit it everywhere near the gate , the weather changes

It's about to rain , and very bad . I hope she's not another Asante

Me : tell she's not like you

Asante : really ?

I chuckle

Kwena : dikwena tsabo diya dumela a tsene ,
efela dira gore kamoso ga robaletse fa gape (her
crocodiles *ancestors* agree that she may come
in , but make sure that tomorrow she doesn't
sleep here again)

I nod as it starts to rain , and she's my first
priority to take her out of the rain

I rush to my chamber , along with her and she's a
bit wet . I don't care about myself

Me : get dry mommy

She laughs , I guess she's gone back to herself

Royalty : a caring you is very cute

I hand her a warm dress and jacket , she changes

Me : put on your boots

Royalty : but....

Me : aa motho wame ga re ngangisane (no my person it's not a debate)

She puts the boots on , I just change my jacket .
Right now a lot is going on in my mind

She's of royalty , on top of that it's this gift . That
seems to be nothing like what Nqabayomzi said .
This shit is too powerful

And there's the phone call she made , I'm still
undecided about that

.

.

.

.

Royalty

I've met the aunts , the uncle's and the cousins .
These people shocked me having a celebration
right in the middle of the rain

They have welcomed me and it was just the most
beautiful thing ever

I got to be dressed in Botswana traditional Makoti
attire . I didn't stay much longer for any of that
anyways , I'm not okay

Like emotionally I'm such a mess , all this feels
like a dream . A bad dream that I'll wake up from

A hell of a nightmare , that I'll be so damn
relieved when I wake from it . What a way to
learn who you are ? Right in a foreign land

Like the whole thing just played in front of my eyes , like I was watching a movie

I can't believe how I'm a princess from Ngwenya Kingdom , apparently it's in KZN

My own father Nkosi Ngwenya , it even sounds strange saying that

But that man is too hostile , he doesn't even give one a chance to reject or say anything

He was just out of it to tell me he's my father , and not that man who raised me

The one thing that's even sicker about this thing is , Asavela's mother being my mother

The door opens , Asante walks in . It's late at night , and I just want to sleep but it's hard

Asante : I'm glad you're still awake

Me : how does one sleep after such a day ?

She sits down on the bed

Asante : you scared me

Me : what happened ?

I have no idea what I was saying there at the gate , because while all of that was happening . I was having my own conversation with this Nkosi Ngwenya , he was showing all of these things

I was shocked to even learn , I was in trance for just a few minutes . But it felt like a lifetime

After having my own life from birth , being shown and played in front of my own eyes like that

Asante : if you want to talk ...

Me : what do I even say ? Where do I even begin? It's a lot

Asante : take your time , process everything . In your own way and pace

Me : this is new to me , I can't just wake up and boom suddenly I'm a princess

Asante : you've always been a princess , just that the truth was hidden from you

Me : you knowthat woman saw me grown up in front of her own eyes . I'd go without food at home for days , while I work and support my own family . And you know her daughter whom I regard as a friend , would always invite me to go eat at their home . Not once , did she even hint that I'm her daughter . How did she feel seeing me struggle and suffer like that ?

I'm a crying mess , she holds me

Asante : I'm so sorry

Me : it hurts , it hurts so bad

I think learning she's my mother is hurting me ,
more than knowing about everything else

She's a mother , didn't she care enough ? And
how does she give me up and go on with her life
like that

I hate that I had to see all of that than be told ,
maybe the pain would be better

Asante : I know what you're going through right
now , and I'm glad that you're letting yourself feel
the pain . Unlike me , I shut down and came
across a lot of pain one right after another . I
never dealt with my pain , only it ate me later on .

Such a drastic change , how does one even deal
with it ? I'm already dealing with one right now

Africa walks in , he looks even more drained like I am

Asante : get out , I want to talk to my wife

Asante : you just had to....

Africa : leave

He even pulls her off of me

Asante : okay fine , don't be agro about it , my love be well okay . And while we're at it , you're spending the night with me

She walks out

Africa : we need to talk

Me : please not about this , I'm tired I...I can't

And I still have to confess my sins , about that
call to Asavela

I wonder if she knows that we're half sisters , but
surely she would have said something

Africa : you know what your father said ?

Me : he said a lot of things ?

Africa : and that you can only spend one night
here , and he doesn't see me as a son in-law .
That hurts

Me : I don't know what to make of all this

Africa : my family has accepted you , but according to your father we have to do things right . But I don't want to overwhelm you right now

Me : the please don't , we'll talk about this tomorrow

Africa : and you'll be moving to the hotel with Asante , until we leave

Me : okay

Africa : I don't want to do this , but we have to respect him

A man I don't even know , is taking control over my life like this

.

.

.

Africa

It's been one hell of a crazy night , I didn't even sleep in the same room with my wife . Because her father sees me as nothing but a mere boyfriend

I walk in the room , and she's alone . I know she's going through the most right now

Me : mommy

She looks at me and smiles

Royalty : Daddy

Me : you managed to sleep ?

She shakes her head

Royalty : hardly

Me : I'm sorry

Royalty : yeah me too

Me : but we need to address this issue

Royalty : I can't address something without the people involved not even here

I sit down

Me : listen , what was the call to your friend back home all about ?

The shock on her face

Royalty : I....I was going to tell you

She walks closer to me

Royalty : I swear I was going to tell you , and I can explain

Me : I'm giving you the chance to explain

Royalty : okay

Me : sit down , and don't look so scared of me

She sits down next to me , but a bit further from me

Royalty : I just called Asavela to tell her that I'm okay , I didn't tell her where I was . I didn't tell her anything that happened , it wasn't with intentions to cause trouble or problems

I think I can trust her , and hope she's really telling the truth

Me : listen I had planned to talk to you , about sending you back home for negotiations .
Because I want to do things right , but now you've instilled some fear in me . You going back home will that mean it's your chance to leave ?

Royalty : nono I'm not leaving , and I don't intend to leave . I'm sorry iflook you can take the phone back and destroy the sim card

Now she's crying , I just pull her closer to me .
And she does that dicking thing she once did , when she was having nightmares

Me : mommy

Her hands are over her head

Royalty : I'm sorry

Langa messed this woman , now she thought I was going to hit her

Royalty : I'm sorry

Women fall victim to men , and apologize for wrongs they don't even know

Me : look at me

She removes her hands slowly , and looks at me

Me : I'll never hit you

Royalty : I'm...

Me : it's okay , if you say you weren't planning to leave then I believe you

Royalty : you...you do ?

Me : yes I do , and it's okay . For now let's put this on hold , until we get back in South Africa . Then you'll decide what to do

Royalty : thank you

She hugs me so tight , I return the gesture back

Royalty : I love you

See nothing hits harder than hearing my wife tells me these three words

Me : I love you

Royalty : where's my son ?

Me : he was worried about you , but you'll see him

Royalty : okay

I don't know where to from here on , but I hope this doesn't break us . Her finding herself and who she is

.

▪

▪

INSERT 35

Africa

My wife has gone to the hotel , and Tyler cried his eyes out . Wanting to leave with her , I didn't want him to go

But he won in the end , I just dropped them off . Asante will be going in a bit later , she'll be staying with them.

She insisted on it , and I just said okay . A lot is happening right now , I don't even know what is what

My elders called a meeting , I'm just glad no council is involved in this . It's just the family , and surely it's about my wife or rather our union

Aunt : re leboga go fitlha Batlokoa (thank you for coming)

Me : ke ne ke kgutla bagolo (I was coming back , my elders)

Uncle : we have a matter in our hands

I look at them , and they're nodding

Me : I'd hate to think you all happened to discuss me and my issues , while I wasn't around

Uncle : it's not like that my nephew

Me : oh how is it like then ?

Uncle : I guess it all just happens , that we have the same questions in mind . And that we all can see this matter

Me : okay

Uncle : your wife is of royalty , she's a blue blood and you weren't aware of it

Me : am I at fault ?

Aunt : it takes royalty to know royalty

There's no such thing

Uncle : now things have already been done wrong

Me : and I'm willing to rectify them

Why do they make it sound as if I'm disputing doing right

Uncle : we don't know these people , and Kwena says the father was pretty much upset . These people will fine us badly

Me : that's fine , I'm willing to pay whatever I have to

Asante : and I'm here to help my brother

Isn't she just sweet , we'll take Lubanzi's money and pay the Ngwenya's . And I'll have my wife

Uncle : we have to go there as soon as possible

Me : I don't even know where that is

And my wife doesn't know those people , she hasn't met them . What if they don't know her either

Aunt : we can wait on our daughter in-law on that

Me : best we do that

I guess this is one of the conversation we have to have , that I'll rather we don't

.

.

.

Royalty

I'm walking on a green veld it's too green , I keep walking

And I have no idea where I am , or what I'm doing here . I'm all alone

With no one and nothing in sight , just the veld that seems to have no end

Voice : Ngwenya

I know this voice , I've heard it before

Voice : Mtimande

I look around and see nothing , only when I turn
to my front he's right here

Me : baba (father)

Since when do I speak isiZulu ? It puzzles me .
But apparently I can speak it very well

I didn't know that , I've always been a Mosotho
girl . I've never even bothered speaking or
learning other languages

Dad : a perfect copy of your father

He's right about that, I sure look like this man .
Even the black complexion it's his

And to think I never wondered how I'm dark , yet
my family are a bit light and everyone

Now I know where I got it , from this talk dark and
handsome man . My father sure died too young

And he doesn't seem to be aging , I don't know
what's the story with that

Dad : let's go sit down , this heat can't be good
for the kids

Suddenly there's a tree in front of us , a huge big green leaves tree . We walk towards it and sit down

Dad : seeing you like this , reminds me of the first time I held you in my arms . I shed some great tears of joy , I can never forget that day . It was the greatest for me , and only it was short lived . Your mother and I we couldn't be , but I loved her. Take it as some forbidden love , that I forced to make it happen . Only your grandparents had already arranged the marriage for me . I lived through the marriage and yet still perused the woman I loved , we had the affair . Which she wasn't aware that it was an affair , until you were born . And I had to now take you from her , because as a princess you couldn't be raised out of wedlock . The woman my parents chose

raised you , only few months later I passed on .
And she moved on , disappeared with you . And
no one could find you , hence they even stopped
looking .

Here I am , about to have a heart to heart
conversation with a spirit

Me : baba am I dead ? (Father)
What am I doing here ? And what is this place ?

Dad : no , you still have a lot to love for . This is
the land of your great forefathers . Where our
ancestors rest , and whenever you need us just
come here .

I don't even know how I come here

Dad : you have to go back home

Me : those people don't want me , they never cared about me . I suffered for them , and my mother just watched me suffer . Right from her lavish life

Dad : I meant home to oNgwenya

Me : kodwa angazi kuphi lapho (but I don't know where that is)

Dad : follow the trail of the crocodiles , it'll lead you home

Me : the tr...

I look next to me , and there sits a huge crocodile. Green like the grass in this veld

Me : baba (father)

Something is stopping me from panicking , just then the grass moves . And only now I realise the many crocodiles around here

Me : oNgwenya

I find some sense of peace , I have ever had in my entire life .

Me : I'll go home

I hope they accept me , from what my father said
they know me .

.

.

.

.

Langa

I woke up this morning and felt a whole different ,
couldn't pin the difference

Until I stood on my own two feet , and was able
to walk .

Not only did I gain feeling in my legs , but I can
walk like I'm fine

I'm so happy , like this is what I've been waiting for . For weeks now and it's finally happening

Sky : so now you're calling me , are we friends ?

I laugh , not even Sky's grumpiness will put me down today

Me : well I can walk

Sky : yeah that's good for you

Me : and it means I can finally go have the surgery done

Sky : that's good , I'll never have to see your ugly face

Me : that's a slip of the tongue , look at me and look at yourself

He laughs

Sky : don't say that

He pulls a chair and sits down

Sky : the first girl to break my heart , said that to me when I was asking her out

We laugh

Me : how old were you ?

Sky : about 14 maybe 15

Me : and some fucking great years later you still remember that ?

Sky : you never forget you first heartbreak boy

Me : I don't even remember mine

Sky : you weren't in love , that's the difference between us

Me : you and love ?

Sky : fuck off , I have a heart you know

Me : blessed are those who get to see it

I'm one of those , Sky did me so well all this time being here . He has shown me great mercy

And for that I'll always and forever be grateful ,
no other person would have been so kind

Sky : need me to call the doctor ?

Me : please

He laughs

Sky : and he says please

Me : I can be polite

Sky : when it fucking suits you

Me : aren't we all the same

He laughs shaking his head , taking his phone out

I hope now I can get my life back , and be fine .
We'll fucking probably have to relocate

Because I'm a wanted fugitive now , there's no way I can love freely in South Africa

More especially in Joburg , and I'm damn not going back to Jail . Like I refuse

.

.

.

Sky

All in all Langa is not a bad guy , I don't condone what he did

No is no and that's simple , there's no other way we can justify that

He fucking messed up , and he paid for it dearly . It doesn't hurt to cut a man some slack

That's simply merely what I'm doing for him , nothing much to it

Langa : thank you for everything

Me : yeah

He's touched I know , and in a way I am too .
This is a man who fucked up . Made one back
choice and decision in life , that's something I
think we all have done

Granted second chances , we would all take
them . As much as he's taking his

He gets in the car , and I hope the next time I see
him he will be healed

The guys drive off , they're taking him to the
airport . And one will go with him to the US

Just to make sure he doesn't encounter any problems , we might have excused ourselves from him

But he's still known as one of ours out there , we can't risk having him hurt in anyway . There's something about the loyalty , between thugs and criminals

That no civilized , law abiding citizen knows about

My phone rings and its Africa , I answer

Me : Oceans

Africa : is he gone ?

He knows that , there's nothing this man doesn't know

Me : yes

Africa : okay , have guys there near his house

Me : okay

Africa : for the sake of the wife and kids

Won't we always , take care of one of our own . I know Africa won't involve himself much

Only because he doesn't want to look like he's betraying his wife , and I understand him

.

.

.

Royalty

Few days in this hotel and I miss Africa so bad ,
he comes everyday

But it's not like sleeping next to him everyday .
Lumkile is around , so Tyler ditched me today

They're all sleeping with Asante , I hate being all
alone

I take my phone and call my man , he didn't take
it even after I said he can

His reaction to the whole thing was different , and it shocked me

I thought he was going to burst , and I was going to be on the receiving end of his wrath

But he was the gentle husband , who only cared to comfort me more than anything

Africa : motho wame (my person)

Me : I miss you hah

He laughs

Africa : wow hah okay

Me : don't

Africa : I miss you too

Me : come see me

Africa : really ?

Me : where are you ?

Africa : somewhere in the yard with Motlokoa

Me : daddy sneak out

He laughs

Africa : what if I get caught ?

Me : then you'll say the twins want you

Am I just making a mockery out of myself right now ? But I miss him and I want him to spend the night

Africa : the very same twins that have months before being here ?

Me : they're already here

He laughs

Africa : mommy you're going to give me at least two rounds when I get there right

I laugh , of course he's only thinking about sex .
But I miss him , and we haven't made love since
we got here

To respect his family and my father .

Me : come

Africa : say no more

I drop the call laughing , I only care that he's
coming nothing else

While he's here we can hopefully get to talk
about me going to find these Ngwenya people

Or he can just do it for me , since he's the criminal . Surely there's nothing he can't find

.

.

INSERT 36

Sky

Communication is key right ? Well that's what they most say

I personally believe it doesn't apply to everyone , more especially this baby mama of mine

But the respect I hold for her , I guess it's what makes me be here right now

I'm not complaining altogether , because it's always a great pleasure spending time with my daughter

And now that I have to go , I have to start a battle I'm so not in the mood for

Me : can we talk ?

She ignores me for a good minute , before she turns her attention to me

Tumi : what ?

The attitude cannot be missed

Me : Asavela is coming around for the holidays ,
and as agreed I need Emihle for the last two
weeks

Tumi : with your s...

Me : don't , I'd hate to take my daughter from you
. She's a Jali , I did right by you by her and your
family so please . Don't start with me you won't
like the end results

Tumi : I just don't understand why you want out
daughter to see you with another woman

Me : is she supposed to see me with another man ?

Tumi : don't mock me , she knows me as her mother as she should . I don't want her being confused , and to call another woman mom

Me : I'd like to think we're not raising an idiot of a child , Emihle knows her parents and she knows Asavela is not her mother . Stop being petty it doesn't suit you

Tumi : But Sky...

Me : I don't wanna hear it , I want my daughter as agreed . Don't push me

She won't use our child to push her own agendas, that's just poor parenting

Tumi : fine , and no need to make threats

Me : those were no threats , try use my daughter again and I'll show you

I get up

Me : fucking it through your head , we are done

Tumi . I don't want you anymore , I have someone now please respect that . As much as she respects you as the mother of my child . You gave me the most beautiful gift of all , and I'll always cherish and appreciate that . But don't use it badly , we didn't last because of our own issues . Now it's time to let go , we were just not

meant to be and that's fine . Sometimes people come into your life for various reasons , maybe us creating her together was one of those reasons for being in each other's lives and nothing more . Please let it be and stop pushing , it's not really attractive when a lady is running after a man . Respect yourself enough to know the boundaries , and not to overstep them . We had our time together , it was great and amazing. It didn't last that's fine we move on , that doesn't stop us from being with other people

From those words I could comfort her , but Tumi being Tumi she might just misread the whole gesture

So I'll rather not and leave , that's me saving us both the drama . That I more especially don't need

▪

▪

Asavela

I think all I needed was just time , to process everything . Make peace with it and just be fine

And I think I've just done that , hence I'm here back in Soweto to see my parents

Dad : it's good to see you

Me : I can't stay angry forever tata (dad)

Dad : glad to see you became the bigger person

Mom : she shouldn't have involved herself in matters that don't involve her to begin with

I've been here for a while , and I'm only seeing her now

I guess she's still not over what happened , I don't understand why

Because in my view she's the one in the wrong , but I'm letting this go . So I'll not even start with her

Dad : khayeke umntana , she came to see us because she's going away for the holidays (leave the child)

Mom : oh ! Why alert us of anything she does this time around ?

Parents will provoke you right ? But then I don't want to fight with my mother anymore

Dad : let's not have any more arguments unnecessary in this house

Mom : must you always side with the child ?

Me : Tata I think I'll go now , thank you for having me

I get up and take my hand bag

Mom : I was not kicking you out

Me : kodwa ma (but mom)

Mom : Asavela khahlale phantsi (sit down)

Dad : please sit

He asks so nice and politely , I sit down

Mom : I was also asking in case you were wondering

Me : mama (mom)

She laughs

Mom : Xolo my baby (I'm sorry)

That's a first , as it comes out lightly as it is . But my mother has never said sorry to me

Me : wow ukahle ma ? (Are you okay mom)

Mom : don't start with me , I acknowledge my wrong in everything that has happened . I wish I could have done things differently , or get the chance to try and fix all of this . If only Royalty was still here , I would be honest with her . Hoping she would forgive me for how much I've wronged her

I don't get the sudden change of heart , but then
I'm happy that my mother is trying

Me : don't lose the hope , I'm sure she'll be back
soon

I don't want to say anything that we've been in
contact with each other

I want her back as well , but clearly it won't
happen until she decides to

Dad : I love what I'm seeing , this is my family .
The family that I know , not this always at each
other's throats

Me : it won't happen again , from my side I've
learned

They both smile , and I'm glad I'll be leaving and
we're fine this side

.

.

Africa

I'm tired being here , honestly I think we're better
off back home

This staying apart from each other , it's not doing
me any good

I'm frustrated to be honest , I just want to leave
this place

Asante : your face says it all

She laughs

Me : did I ?

Asante : worry not you didn't , but your face is sour

I join her laughing

Me : Don't get me wrong neh , I love this place
it's beautiful . The people are amazing ,
Botswana is just naturally calm and peaceful b

Asante : but you miss your crazy Cape Town city
life

Me : I miss my husband

She burst out making me feel like I was just so nasty saying that

Asante : Africa sees you everyday , few days ago he sneaked in

My jaw hangs open

Asante : aa I saw that (no)

Me : yeah well

Asante : I'm here with you , I don't see my husband . Imagine how frustrated I am

Me : your choice , this certainly wasn't mine

Asante : Africa has you bad girl , I give up . I never thought I'll see the day my brother has a woman , and is loved this much . But I appreciate it because the love goes both ways . It's even safe to say he loves you way more than you love him

I look at the door before he even appears

Voice : Dr Phil , leave me and wife alone

I smile Asante frowns , that's her business . As for me I'm just happy to see my husband

Asante : you lack timing though

Africa : that's fine phela , mare etswa (but leave)

Asante : must you always kick me out ?

Africa : it seems so , because you fail to get out all by yourself

Asante : yhoh Royalty thetha nomntu wakho Sisi
(talk to your man)

Africa : leave so she can do that , the best way she knows how to

How disturbing is that ? Poor Asante walks out

Me : must you....

Africa : come give me a kiss , I missed you

Say no more , in no time I'm on my feet right next to him

Africa : o rata dilo tse snax (you love nasty things)

Me : o snax wena (you're nasty yourself)

I'm standing on my heels kissing him

.

.

.

Africa

The kiss gets heated up , I know we're just going to end up on the bed making love . As much as that would be nice and all , I want us to talk about this . Because she hears it from someone else

That being Sky , that boy has a month . It's fine when he runs it to me , but not to my wife

Me : motho wame a re bue (my person let's talk)

I pull out of the kiss , does she give me one nasty look

Me : it's important please

Royalty : tell me that we're leaving

Okay , this is a sudden U-turn

Me : what ?

Royalty : no you heard me , I want us to leave .
This is not working

By this she even demonstrates with her arms

Me : this not being us I hope , because ...

Royalty : stop with that nonsense Africa . I can't stay here anymore . You're my husband and yet live back at your palace , while I'm stuck in a hotel with your sister . No ways I can't , I want to sleep next to you everyday . I'm your wife and not your girlfriend , can I just be treated like a wife

She emphasizes on that wife

Me : okay I get you and we'll leave

I knew she wasn't happy about this living separately situation , nor was I . But I didn't know it bothered and affected her this much

We can go home , they've met and accepted her at home . That's all I wanted to do

But now my worry is won't her newly found father be a problem to us living together ?

Me : but we still need to talk

Royalty : about what now ?

Me : please let's sit down

We both sit down , but you can see she doesn't want to

Me : hate me , curse do whatever but just don't leave me

Royalty : why talk as if I have a choice

Me : okay , okay I think we can change the terms of the relationship . You're not my slave , but my wife . And that means you get the benefits of that

Royalty : what are you saying ? That I'm free now

I hope I never live to regret this

Me : yes

Royalty : I won't thank you for letting me have my human right

Other men marry women who just go with whatever is being said , and I got this one who stands her ground and speaks her mind

Me : okay , listen I...I know you know what I did to Langa and I'm sorry to bring him back

She's not okay now , and she's not even hiding it.
It's visible

Me : he had been kept and taken care of at one of the houses I own . And as we speak right now, he's at the US getting a surgery done . To fix the damage done to his manhood

She doesn't say anything for a while , I hate that the man who broke her lives

Royalty : so you're responsible for all that ?

I don't know whether she's angry or disappointed with me or what

Me : not directly nor personally but in a way yes I am

She gets up and walks to the window , I don't know if she's stable mentally right now

I can't have her going out through the window , and it's very much possible

I walk to her and get close enough to make sure she doesn't do anything regrettable

Me : I am so sorry and...

Royalty : come back to tell me when we're leaving

I have no idea where we stand right now

Me : I...

Royalty : please

I nod

Me : okay

Is us going back home good for us after this
revelation or what ?

I close the window for all our sakes , and upon
that she walks away from the window

I walk out and find Asante right outside her room

Me : we're leaving , please watch her for tonight

She smiles

Asante : she has you....

Me : I'll still beat the shit out of you

She walks in the room . I better go find us plane tickets back home

I hope I did not ruin us with that confession about Langa

.

.

.

Asavela

It has been confirmed I love this place , don't know if it's change of scenery getting at me or what . But I'm glad to be here , I hope these four weeks sure are worth it

Sky : you don't look happy

He's kidding me , I'm looking outside just admiring this beautiful place

Me : being here with you , how can I not be happy ?

Sky : you're not even ...

I laugh kissing his cheek , I know he just wants my attention nothing much

Me : I'm sorry

Sky : not forgiven babe

I smile trailing my hand down his chest to his pants

Sky : don't do that shit , we still value our lives

Me : this is me paying attention to you

I'm brushing his dick over his pants , and it's reacting

Sky : fuck , I can stop right here

I laugh

Me : no ways , you're not fucking me in your car
in dead tired

Sky : but babe...

Me : please take us home love , I need to rest

Sky : women will be the death of us men

Me : shame , and where is your other woman ?

He smiles , taking my hand off his dick I laugh

Sky : she's home with her mother

Me : ah , and does she know I'm here ?

Sky : she ?

Me : uTumi ?

Sky : I told her few days ago

Me : and ?

Sky : and what babe ?

He knows exactly what I'm asking , she's the same woman who hit him with a bottle . All

because of me , that her daughter saw me . Now it makes me wonder how it'll be this time around

Me : won't you see Emihle while I'm around ?
You said she's coming for the last two weeks

Sky : and she is

Just like that ?

Me : hard to believe Tumi has no problem with that

Sky : I don't know about her problems , but she agreed

Me : okay

He takes my hand into his

Sky : don't worry , you won't have any drama while you're here

Me : thank you , especially since now I've fixed things with my parents . I can use some peaceful time

Sky : I'm glad to hear that

I just nod , I avoid to talk about Royalty with him . He always gives me strange vibes I don't understand

I'm just happy to be here with him , and getting to spend all this time with him

.

.

INSERT 37

Royalty

Nothing beats being back in Cape town , now I just can't wait to get home . I hope now we can deal with whatever and everything , and just finally get our lives back in order

Africa : motho wame (my person)

I look at him briefly , and just rest my head on his shoulder

He keeps on kissing the side of my head , my hand lays on his lower stomach

Africa : I love you

Me : I love you

These are just the words we've just uttered to each other today

Africa : I'm sorry about everything

I don't know if I'm crazy or what , I don't even know how I'm feeling

Should I feel compassion over a man who did me so bad ? And even left me with a sickness for my entire life

Me : I hate him so much , and I want nothing to do with him . I want him as far away as he can get from me

Africa : I feel like I've failed you now

I'm confusing this man

Me : no don't , I just wish you had nothing to do with him getting the help he needs

I can't believe I've just uttered those words

Africa : is there anything you want me to do about this ?

Is there ? I so wish Langa was dead so that he can never hurt any other woman ever

But then again it's me , I don't have the heart .
Behind this brave façade I always put on

I'm soft as it gets and now I'm just broken , I don't know how to heal from this

Last night I cried just hearing someone talk about rape on TV . I'm not okay and by the look of things I'm far from being okay , a mere talk triggered what happened to me

I slowly dying inside and I don't know how to open up about it

Africa : mommy

I look at him

Africa : I want you to tell me what do you want me to do about this , and I won't even hesitate

That's my husband he'll mess you up , fix you and still have no problem to kill you

But do I want him to kill Langa ? I don't think I do

Me : please can wejust let this go

Africa : don't....

Me : I'm hurting Africa , I'm positive I live on pills and that's for eternity . I'm scared for my babies live's , I pray day and night for them to be negative . I fear for my life , I'm even scared to sleep at night , what if I sleep and it's my last night ? What if I never wake up ? I'm the way I am because of that man

I never thought , I'll break down again about this .
He just holds me in his arms

I cry until my eyes even hurt , how does one ever get over this ?

I can't live like this , and right now I hate myself for being so weak and crying

It feels like I'm giving Langa power over my life ,
his action has me completely messed up

.

.

.

Africa

Tell me why Langa is still alive ? Fuck I messed
up here . I should have just killed his useless self,
family or not right now I'm just being a family man
myself

Having to see my wife cry like that , and knowing
he's the reason behind that

I have a good mind to just finish him off , how does he get to hurt her like this ? And still be given a second chance

Sky : shouldn't you be resting ?

Me : rest ? I had to watch my wife cry herself to sleep

I'm breathing fire

Sky : am I missing something ?

Me : where the fuck is he ?

I left my wife in bed alone , I would have loved to comfort her the whole night

But I'm angry and I need to take these frustrations out , before I hurt myself

Sky : shit , I thought you're letting this whole thing go ?

Me : and I think that was just a mistake

Voice : you're Africa Oceans you don't make mistakes

My eyes itch , I make sure to look away from Sky

Jay : Sky excuse us

Sky : do you really think I'll leave you two here ?
So you can plot on how to find Langa and kill him

Jay : kill him sila ? (We're here)

Sky : and you have means

Jay : just go

He pushes Sky out

Sky : Oceans really ?

I don't look at him , Jay closes the door and I turn and face him

Jay : fuck

Me : I need to go out now

Jay : I can't risk you running or flying wild out there , unleash in here

He sits down by the corner , this room is big enough

.

.

.

Royalty

He goes down on the floor on his knees , growling and it's a painful growl . Sweat comes out of his boy everywhere , just that it seems like water more than it is sweat

He looks like he's in pain , he bows his head . His back is exposed and he's completely teared his t-shirt

Right in the middle of his back , right where his shoulder blades are . He starts tearing up , but he doesn't even bleed only what looks like blue wings appear

I'm seeing this clearly , he's growing huge blue wings on his back

It becomes such a chaotic mess in the room , I don't even know how he's fitting in there

The guy sitting at the corner is just sitting there , loud rumbles of thunder and lightening strikes

Right in the room , his wings does something like they're glowing . It's like the more they're thunder and lightening he feeds off that

How does something that looks so beautiful , have the ability to be evil and good ?

Just looking at him , these wings feed on thunder and lightening , that would explain his anger

But the way they're glowing , there's also a sense of peace from them

This goes on for a few minutes , but he keeps groaning from time to time . Like he's hurting himself , and these wings keep flapping like they want to fly

He's just having an inner fight within himself . To stay put and grounded , yet he still wants to erupt

My body shakes and I'm quick to open my eyes , and it's my baby boy

And of course his father is not here , I swear Africa is like a witch

He just gets along very well with night hours , the dream comes back .

But how is that possible ? What is he ?

Me : what's wrong ?

Tyler : mommy I can't sleep

Me : me too

Tyler : what do we do ?

He's even whispering , I'm sure he doesn't see
his father is not here

Me : we go downstairs

He smiles I get up , and grab a throw we go
down . But my head is stuck on what I saw

.

.

.

Sky

Honesty right ? But the fear in me , just doesn't want to let me be completely honest

Should I just risk it all ? With Africa out for blood I might just as well

He seemed to be out for Langa , and I know there's nothing I can do or say to stop him

And with that Jayden , he's just fired up nothing else . I was a bit relieved this morning when my guys told me he's still at the hospital

Meaning he's still okay , but for how long ? Africa can get to him anytime he wants to . And I can't stop him

Asa : babe

I look at her

Asa : are you okay ?

Me : I'm okay

She sits down next to me

Me : I'll prefer you on top of me

She laughs , and straddles me

Asa : there you go

Me : now this is better

She lays her head on my shoulder , breathing
down my neck

Me : we need to talk

This is break or make us , but the fear I hold I'm
not sure I should tell about this

As much as she's quite about it , because of her
reasons . I also have my own reasons why I can't
be honest with her

Asa : please don't tell me you had another
encounter with another woman again , and I don't
care who it is or what happened . Sky I swear

this time I'll leave you , I won't appreciate you being honest about it . And telling the truth , I let it go the first time I won't again

I sure hurt her with the whole Tumi thing ,I guess she just gave me the impression that she's okay

But clearly she's not , and I've instilled that what if he does it again mentality

Cheating messes up with a woman , the doubts and insecurities it brings . That is she enough ? What does the other woman have that she lacks?

Me : I'm so sorry about that , and I can't change it. If I could take it back I would . But right now I'm trying to be the best I can be for you and for us , I'll never go astray like that again

Me : I'm sorry for reacting...

Me : don't apologize for expressing your feelings
my love

I bring her face to look at me

Me : I love you

Asa : I know you do and I love you

But now I'm even more scared to tell her the
truth, about Royalty

Asa : what did you want to talk about ?

Me : let's just leave it

Asa : I'll keep an open mind babe

This is her sister , I don't know what kind of open mind will she keep

Asa : if you don't want to talk then it's fine we....

Me : I know where Royalty is , her kidnapping was a mistake . She wasn't the one wanted , she just got caught in the mix . She's....

Asa : what did you say ?

Couldn't she just let me talk and be done with this once and for all ?

Asa : you know where she is ? Sky how long have you known ?

Me : since the beginning it was men working for me who took her by mistake

She just gets off me and runs upstairs , a few minutes gathering myself I go upstairs

She is crying , glad she didn't lock the door I walk inside .

Me : babe

Asa : please leave me alone Sky

Hell no , that's not happening

Me : please lets talk ...

Asa : there's nothing to talk about , you took my sister . And you watched me cry about her , while you're the one who took her . What kind of a man are you ?

The kind that loves her

Me : your sister called you , and you didn't tell anyone that....

Asa : those are not the same and you cannot compare the two

Me : actually my love I can , and I am . You kept

quite to keep her safe , what do you think I'm doing?

I crouch down and try to touch her , but does she gets violent . I just hold the tiny hands , she's just being cute right now

Asa : she's my sister dammit

Me : yeah and I get that ...

Asa : get this , I can't be in love with a man who steals women

Me : let your heart decide that , you're too irrational right now

Asa : what the he....

Me : let's watch that tone and keep it in check

Asa : I hate you

Me : and I love you

She's fucking kidding herself , I'm not letting go .
Until she gets her emotions in check , and we
can talk about this rational

It's maybe an hour or and a half later , she's calm
now and doesn't look like she wants to fight with
me

Asa : where is she ?

Me : where she lives , look you communicate with her . If she decides to let you know that's fine , but I can't say anything about this anymore

Asa : so you won't tell me ?

Me : no

Asa : but babe for such a long time , you owe me this much

Me : do you want me to betray your sister ?

She looks at me for a while and shakes her head

Me : then give her the time to tell you everything

Asa : what if she doesn't get to...

Me : that person is not captured anymore , so her life is perfectly fine . You have no need to worry that she might not make it

Asa : you assure me of that ?

Me : yeah

I will not be the one telling her , everything that's been happening with Royalty . That she's married now , a mother to a 6 year old and on top of that pregnant

Asa : so this is what you meant ? Kodwa Sky how do you live with yourself ? Depriving women of their lives

Me : stop okay , I no longer do any of that

Asa : it doesn't make it any better

Me : did I say it does ?

I'm not being unsympathetic about all this , but
I'm one person who just doesn't know how to
soothe a conversation

Me : yeah sure I messed up I admit that

And I won't even try to shy away from my deeds

Me : I'm owning up to my part in all of that , but
can we just not let it come between us ?

I love her and I don't want to lose her , I'm not afraid to be vulnerable about it

Asa : if ever she comes back , won't me being with you seem like betrayal ?

Royalty is married to a man who actually ran the whole thing , my relationship with Asavela shouldn't even feel like a tiny betrayal

Me : we'll cross that bridge when we get there

She nods against my chest , but I know she's unsure of this now . And that fucking scares me

Africa

My sister and her kids left this morning , I'm just glad I got back before having to take them to the airport . And my wife decided to come with me , as for Tyler he's with Sambulo . The boy couldn't wait to go to his friend

Me : why do you keep looking at me like that ?

Royalty : find oNgwenya for me

Shit , a day back and we're already there .
What's next going back to Joburg ?

Me : are you asking or telling me ?

She smiles , I guess we're not fighting

Royalty : whichever way you take it

Me : shouldn't we wait until you give birth ?

She laughs , I feel like an idiot right now . Of course she can tell I'm just trying to stall

Royalty : while we're at it , I need to go to Joburg. I want to face my mother , before I meet my father's family

Me : mommy....

Royalty : I remember you saying I'm your wife , and so I get to have those benefits

My own words being used against me right now .
I even feel like Jesus , when people start saying
to him “in your word you said”

Me : when ?

I don't feel okay about this , but I also don't want
her to resent me

Royalty : as soon as possible

I just nod , I don't know if I still want to engage in
this anymore

Royalty : what are you ?

I side eye her

Me : what ?

Royalty : don't what me , I know you know that I saw you so please

Fuck , that didn't even occur in my mind

Me : I don't know what you mean by asking what I am ? Am I not your husband , the father of your kids ?

Royalty : don't make me an idiot Africa , you grew wings and fed off thunder and lightening
Shit I am not safe from this woman

Me : who said I fed off of them ?

Royalty : did you not ?

I'm from Batlokoa and Manzini there's no way that I can be normal

Me : let's leave this talk for another day

She says nothing , I really don't want to talk about this at all

Me : I'm just a protector okay , was one for my sister from birth . But I never got to fulfill that , as we didn't grow up together . When she was pregnant I imprinted on Liyana , so now I'm like her chosen and her protector . Since my sister had already married . Look there's a lot you don't know about us , and it'll be hard for me to explain

this so you can understand me . Beyond being humans , there's also things within us . And unlike you seemingly having your father , we have creatures . Things that are just unexplainable

Royalty : what have I gotten myself into ?

Me : nare ere wa tshamika (say you're kidding)

Royalty : I'm not

Me : yeah well I'm still not letting you go , so either way you're stuck with me . I'll start looking for your people

Maybe it's best I do , so we can be done and I'll
go back to Manzini and take back what's mine .
The sooner the better

.

.

.

INSERT 38

Asavela

This is me going through things sham , and I
don't even know how to go about it

I love Sky that I can't deny , but having learnt what I've just heard I don't know how I feel . Yes my love hasn't changed , but how I really view this man has changed in a way

This is man who has three women present in his life right now , I don't know much about his family

Because he hardly ever talks about them , and I don't want to seem like preying asking too many questions concerning them

He has Emihle , he has me and Tumi . How does he get to do such a job , if I can even call it that
Hasn't it ever occurred to him that , one day it can be any of us . Didn't he even stop for a minute , and consider the families of those girls and women ?

Sky : one thing I have never done , is give you wrong impressions about myself . I've always been raw as it gets , I've never given you any perfect impressions . You knew I was doing illegal things , and while we're at that I might have stopped the kidnappings . But I'm still doing other things . My fault in this is not being utterly completely honest with you about your sister , but I was scared of losing you and I still am . But I can assure you this , Royalty is fine . Way much fine better than you can imagine . I'm sure even if she gets a chance to get her life back , she'll choose this one she has now

Do I really want to believe that ? Like how comfortable can she be when she's been kidnapped ?

Sky : how you deal with all this , let it be up to you . But us lets be adults about it

Me : I'm not breaking up with you

I think I'll be a fool to , as much as I'm not comfortable with what I know . I think my love for him is letting me overlook this

I just hope I can be able to live with my decision and choice , and not end up resenting him for it in future

.

Africa

I hope I'm not going crazy , but my wife is distant towards me . For the past few days , she's hardly even spending time with me

And when she's does , you can't miss that she's just forcing herself to

And I'm starting to be worried , I don't know if this is about finding her father's family

Or having to go back to Joburg , or its just me personally . I'd hate to think that she's scared of me now

I walk in our room , and she's sitting in front of the mirror . Shirtless her tummy exposed

Me : that's a bit creepy

Royalty : you're creepy

Me : mommy you know I'm still the same man
that you love

She focuses back to the mirror

Me : we're people we're different , and trust me
when I tell you this . Being royalty feels more like
a curse than anything else . I did not choose to
be this , I was born this way .

I sit down on the bed and turn my back on her . I
take my t-shirt off

Me : I was about briefly Tyler's age , when I first turned . And I had no idea what it is , I was just a kid playing not paying attention to anything . It started with just a mere itch , I scratched my back until I bled cause the itch wasn't going away . The wings appeared so like its feathers , as naïve and young as I was I thought it was just cute . So I hid this from everyone else , I spent less time alone . Always touching and playing with them , but the more I grew the bigger they got. At 8 I think , I was out in the veld as usual playing alone . The wings had grown way much bigger , they came out I couldn't control them . They were heavy I tripped and fell , the damn wings suffocated me for hours underneath them . How I lived and survived that I don't know . I came to and it was a few weeks later , and I was underwater . I'm more on the good side than the bad , but I'm also human . And when I get angry beyond my own control , whatever is within takes

over . I learnt to live with who and what I am ,
and I hope you can do the same . I'll never hurt
you nor our kids , if anything they'll be
protection to you all . I reacted because of how
you were feeling , I wanted to avenge you .
Somehow you're fuelling me yet still taming me
at the same time .

I feel her behind me , I bow my head and close
my eyes

Royalty : does it hurt when they come out ? You
sounded like you're in pain

She's rubbing my back , more precisely where
the wings appear

Me : no it doesn't hurt

Royalty : this is a lot , I feel like our lives are just a mess

Me : I know

We went from the kidnapping , to falling in love getting married having kids . Learning she's of a royal blood

And now this with me , I don't think we're even understanding anything about us right now

.

Royalty

Africa : you want to see them ?

Is he crazy ?

Me : you'll blow the whole house

He laughs

Africa : I won't , they won't come out fully . I can do that in an open veld or in water

Wings and water ? That doesn't even make sense . Aren't they heavy when they get wet ?

Me : were they fully out , the other day ?

Africa : no

Me : okay but don't scare me , let me stand back

He laughs , my life only comes once . This is our bedroom and he wants to show off his wings .

What if the roof goes off ?

I watch him closely , as he bends his back . It's a scary thing to watch , his back opening and parting like that . It feels like his bones are literally breaking , the way they're sounding as the wings come out

It's fascinating and yet scary at the same time .
I've never seen anything like this

Me : wow

Africa : that's enough now

His voice sounds strained , no ways that this doesn't hurt him

Me : can I....can I touch them

Africa : yeah , but don't pull anything

I laugh , what does he take me for . Of course they're his wings surely pulling would hurt him
I get in the bed , and the feel of the wings on my body is ticklish

Me : wow this is beautiful

Africa : you think ?

Me : yeah it's amazing actually , never thought I'll ever meet such beings in life

His breathing gets heavy , it worries me

Me : what's wrong ?

He chuckles

Africa : nothing , just that ...

Thunder rumbles outside , do you see me getting off the bed like the speed of lightening

Africa : I'm sorry

Slowly they go back , I wonder how he keeps them inside

Me : okay , wow

Africa : sorry about that

He turns and faces me , I get on the bed and just hug him

Me : together we'll be fine right ?

Africa : always

He returns the hug

Africa : let's go to Joburg this coming week

I wanted this

Me : are you sure ?

Africa : yes , I want all of this done

Me : and have you found anything about my father's family ?

Africa : it wasn't hard to , that's why I want us to go to Joburg so you can go there after that

Me : thank you so much

Africa : anything for you

I hope I can make peace with the past , and find
a way to accept and embrace the future

.

.

.

Sky

My daughter is coming to be with us today , and
as usual Tumi was just being herself . I just
ignored her and I think I've come to a decision to
take Emihle from her

Asa : you mind seems to be so far away

Me : and don't I just do a lot of that as of late

She takes my hand into hers , Emihle is sleeping
on the back seat

Asa : babe talk to me

Me : this drama with Tumi is just annoying me ,
and I think I want my daughter to stay with me
now

Asa : what ?

Me : I didn't want to do this , but she's just
pushing me . Using Emihle to fight our battles ,
and that's just wrong

She says nothing

Me : you don't think I should do this ?

Asa : I respect Tumi , she's the mother of your child . And you two share something that we don't share as of yet . I don't know the place she holds in your life , and so whatever decision you take towards your daughter I have no say in it . Deep within yourselves only you know how you feel and what's right . Do what's right not for you or her but for Emihle , she's the only innocent one here

Sky : I hear you my love , and I think taking her is best . I'll never use Emihle to spite or hurt her mother , she can still see her anytime she wants .

Asa : well then there you have it

I smile

Me : so you plan to give me kids

She laughs not too loud though

Asa : I plan to , I hope you still want kids . And
Emihle needs siblings

Me : siblings and not just one ?

Asa : no ways she'll be bored babe

Me : mhm so how many are you giving me ?

Asa : maybe two

Me : two is enough , we should start on your last year of varsity .

Asa : oh ?

Me : yes oh , I want an educated wife mna

Asa : kodwa babe (but)

Me : for real , I only have a mere degree in business it's not even that much . I want a wife that's way much more educated than me

Asa : I love how you support me in my education , you're such a keeper

Me : and don't you ever forget that

I think we're getting through just fine

.

.

.

INSERT 39

Asavela

Seeing a strange number calling me , I'm even
scared to answer it

Sky : babe that phone is making noise

Emihle : yakhala i'phone le (the phone is ringing)

It has just been amazing having her with us

Me : I don't know the number

Sky : True caller kalok , who doesn't have that in this day and age

Me : why are you mocking me ? And for your information I...

Sky : you have it I know

Me : and clearly the number is not recognised

Sky : well answer it , trust me you want to

Emihle : halo (hello)

See the little miss answering my phone , and
we're just looking at her surprised

Emihle : Mihle lo (this is Emihle)

We're that clever already ? At just 3 years

Emihle : khona Savela apha no tatam yea (yes
Asavela is here with my father)

Sky : uthetha nabani ? (who are you talking to)

Emihle : shhhh tatam thetha (quite daddy I'm speaking)

Sky : uyayibona into yakho ? Not answering your phone now she's talking to a stranger (See your things)

I didn't tell her to answer

Me : uyayibhanxa ngok (you're exaggerating)

Emihle : thatha ke (take)

I take the phone from her

Me : h...hello ?

Royalty : eh wethu who's child is that (bruh)

I sigh in relief

Me : it's just my sister

I say to Sky who gives me a bored look

Me : it's Sky's daughter

Royalty : ah you're with him ?

Me : yes , doing a visitation

Royalty : bummer , I'm going to Joburg tomorrow.

Me : what ?

It can't be true

Me : are you for real ?

Royalty : yes

Me : but....wait how long will you be there ? Tell me you're coming for good ?

Royalty : unfortunately no , a lot happened . And I just need to deal with some things , fix a few and get back to my life

Me : Royalty what life ?

I don't want to believe what Sky said , the possibility of Royalty living her life away from us doesn't sit well with me . She still needs to find out the truth about herself , I can't say it's best she doesn't

Royalty : listen , is there a chance and possibility to see you ?

I'm all the way in Cape town , do I cut my trip short so I can see her or what ?

Me : will I be able to reach you when I call back ?

Royalty : I don't know

This is frustrating

Me : okay , let me see what I can do

Royalty : okay I need you

That I need you holds a lot

Me : okay

Royalty : I love you

Me : and I love you big sis

She drops the call , I look at Sky

Sky : now what ?

Me : please hear me out

Sky : sit down when you talk to me babe

The chauvinist in this man is hidden deep within

Emihle : babe

Hell no , like no we're not teaching a kid such words . Her father laughs and it's not funny

Me : aibo Sky

Sky : I said sit down , yeka indaba zabo babe
(leave matters of)

I sit right back down

Me : Royalty is going home

Sky : oh

He's chilled as ever , and this brings me to this hard question

Me : does my sister know you took her ?

He nods slowly , I feel like all this is just one messed up situation

Me : does she know you're the man I'm dating ?
Or she thinks it's another Sky ?

Sky : there can only be one Sky babe , and your sister knows it's me

I get up and pace

Me : oh my word

Why was she so calm , upon hearing I'm with him?

Sky : sit down and stop that , say what you wanted to say

Me : you just said my sister knows that I'm dating the very same man , that kidnapped her

Sky : and you'll drive yourself crazy alone , what did she say ?

Clearly , I'll go crazy alone

Me : she said she wants to see me

Sky : and now you want to leave ?

Me : I know we agreed I'll stay for the full holidays , but if this is my only chance of ever seeing my sister . My love I don't want to miss it

Sky : when do you want to leave ?

Me : she's leaving tomorrow

Sky : mhm it's fine . But I'm coming with

Me : hah babe

Sky : aiii don't hah me , I'm not your friend

What did I say ?

.

.

Royalty

This day couldn't come any earlier , now I don't even know where to go

What I used to call home first , or see the woman
who gave birth to me

I would have loved for Asavela to be here , but
knowing she's with Sky it means she's in Cape
Town

To think we're just an hour away from each other,
and we're kept apart

Like we're so far from each other , but I do
understand there's a reason for all of that

She needs to know the truth , I'm a bit scared of
how she'll welcome it

For years we've been friends , only we're half sisters

Me : where are we going ?

He's not taking the route to Soweto

Africa : going to check in at the hotel , before I take you

I nod , after a while we arrive at the hotel .

Imagine my shock finding out he booked just one room

He'll be sharing with Tyler , we couldn't leave him back home with no one to watch over him

Me : Africa Oceans

I feel like causing a scene right now , and just causing him stares

Tyler : when mommy gets like this , she's angry daddy

He laughs , and he knows mommy is angry

Africa : what have I done now ?

Me : where do you suppose I'm going to sleep ?
When you booked just one normal room

Africa : I...

Me : you should have booked a suite , and I know very well that you can afford it

Africa : of course we can afford it , just that I thought you'll want to sleep in Soweto or something

Me : what's or something ? And why did you even thought in the first place heh ?

Africa : mommy....

Tyler : daddy buy her food

I look at this cute devil , why is he giving his father pointers ?

Africa : thank you young champ , let me get the suite . You two go to the restaurant I'll find you just now

Tyler : mommy let's go , daddy is doing right now

I'm defeated right now

.

.

.

Asavela

I came with Sky , and we had to take Emihle back to Tumi . And being a child she didn't even get sad about it

Sky : are you okay ?

Me : yes

Sky : why are you lying ?

For a man go know you this well

Me : well I don't really know

Sky : you're not okay , and you're scared

Me : that's normal right ?

Sky : yeah it is , but I'm here if it goes south side
I'm just a phone call away

Me : thank you for coming baby

Sky : I'm here for you always

I kiss his cheek

Sky : and then you think we're friends

He tilts my face , takes my lips into his and we
kiss

Sky : a quickie before you leave

He says already taking my blouse off , sucking
on my boobs. I lower his pants and boxers , slide
my panty to the side

He lifts my ass , I take his dick into my hand
sliding down it

Me : ohhhhhh

He grabs on my waist thrusting in underneath
me, I cling my arms around his neck

I throw my head back , letting the feeling of
pleasure take place . To what he's doing to my
boobs with my mouth , going down to my nuna
and what his dick is doing inside of me

I can't help but move my waist to meet his
thrusts, he deep groans

There's nothing sexier than a man's groans during sex , it goes in deep

Sky : fuck , I love you

Me : I....

He thrusts in deeper and faster , moans and screams take over reaching an orgasm

Clinging tight to his back , it's seconds later he cums . He holds me tight until we have calm down from pleasure

Sky : damn you fire though

I laugh , taking his lips into mine . He just lets me be in control of the kiss for a few minutes

Me : and now I have to go

Sky : right , legs go shower you're not going there reeking of sex

I get off him , we fix ourselves and walk upstairs for a shower . I keep it as short as I can , dry lotion put on blue skinny jeans white t-shirt and blue sneakers . He puts on just casual pants and shirt with sneakers , and drives me to Soweto

Me : I hope my mother doesn't start with her drama

He chuckles , and I really hope she doesn't . I don't even know what Royalty coming back is bringing

He drops me off , and I walk inside . The parents are home

Mom : and then wena ? (You)

Me : I came home ma (mom)

Dad : what happened to you holiday ?

Me : decided to cut it short

I can't even bring myself to tell the truth , what if I do and they freak on me ? I just can't

Mom : something is going on with you

Me : nothing is going on with me

Dad : I guess we ought to say welcome back

Me : thank you I guess

I walk to the kitchen leaving my mom giving me
nasty stares , in a very suspicious way

.

.

.

Africa

My wife is not dramatic no ways no she's not ,
but now hah I think these babies have something
to do with this

She really wanted me to sweat back there and I
fucking almost did

Because I don't know the dramatic side of her , I
know my always string willed woman

I got the suite , and the food she ate also worked
because now she's very fine

Except what stands before her , and now we're
right in Soweto

She's conflicted and doesn't even know where to go first

Tyler : daddy what's this place ?

My boy has never been to a township , it's not even about being snobbish

Me : this is Soweto

Tyler : why are we here ? It's different

What am I supposed to say to that mna ?

Royalty : I grew up here , and my home is here well...

She sighs , this is heavy on her . I hope our babies are strong enough to handle all of this

Tyler : but our home is back home mommy

Royalty : I know my baby I know

We sit in the car for a while in just silence

Me : can I ?

She nods

Me : just do what you need to do , the most important of all . What takes centre stage and priority

Royalty : if I go there what will I say to those people ? Why did she run away with me when I was not her child ? I don't think is because I was slaving for them , so maybe that's why

What she needs is just to go see the woman , who carried her for 9 months

That's the closure and healing of peace that she needs , not the other family . But I don't want to just say it out loud to her , I want her to be the one realising it

Royalty

I feel anger more than pain , and I don't know how I'll react to seeing this woman

Me : please come with me

This wasn't the plan , it's not what was supposed to happen

But I need this man right here , I need him to be in there with me . I can't face these people alone

Me : please I need you

Africa : let me make a call

I let him , and I have no idea who he's calling . I hope it's none of his men we don't need the people . This is not war

We wait in the car for a few minutes , and Sky stops right next to me

I guess Asavela is here now that's a relief , but it's also a bit scared because I don't know how she'll react

Sky : Mrs Oceans

I give him a frown he smiles

Sky : I'll take care of your son , and please don't attack my woman

Me : really dude

Sky : did you just...

Africa : she did

Sky : damn okay

He takes the sleeping Tyler to his car

Sky : he can sleep over

Me : no

As soon as we're done here we're going to fetch him

Africa : let's go

See my man feeling like the man that he is right now , about to fight battles with his wife

We walk inside the yard , since the gate wasn't locked

He's the one to knock at the door , and the expression of Asavela opening the door

Drooling all over him , this girl I don't blame her but no . This man is fully taken

Me : he's married , and Sky will behead you

Asa : all the handsome ones are always taken

She laughs crushing me into a tight hug ,
shedding tears

Asa : I missed you so much

Me : I know you did

And she knows I missed her as well

Asa : sorry , come in . Looking at you , you're
glowing

We walk in and her mother , or should I say our
mother is already on her feet

The shock , regret and hurt on her face . One look at me she sheds tears , and I'm not even moved

She breaks down , and her husband comforts her

Asa : we all need to sit down for this

Her words tell me she knows seems like all this will be very interesting

I hope that I wasn't the only one made a fool out of this , because even this mere friendship will come to an end

INSERT 40

Asavela

I have never and I mean never seen my mother cry like this , yes I've seen her cry but not like this

Dad : can we all just sit down , I think that's what...

Royalty : no I think not

No ways , Royalty just interrupted my father talking . That has never , my friend is as humble as they come

Dad : what ?

Royalty : all I need your wife to tell me , my so called mother is why did she watch me suffer for so long . Taking care of people who are nothing to me not even relatives . I had to find out the truth from a dead man , because she was just too selfish and damn self centred she didn't care about me . Her own damn child , what kind of a mother are you ? Like do you hate me that much?

Something has switched in here , she knows the truth and she's damn hella furious

Me : babe like...

Royalty : stop , you knew and you kept quite

Whoa !

Me : I swear I didn't find out , until you got kidnapped I had no idea . Royalty I would never lie to you like that

Royalty : your mother did

That somehow hurts , she's our mother . Would have been better if she put it that way

Royalty : I won't blame you not fault you for the years he chose to keep me with his wife . But what about the years we've been living just a few streets away from you ? I'd go days without food, yet slaving day and night for people who didn't even give shit about me . And you know what

now it all fucking makes sense , my own mother didn't give one so why should they have

I've known Royalty for 5 years now , and not even on a single day I've ever heard her swear

Mom : I'm....

Royalty : don't say sorry you'll piss me off , I already hate you and that will just ...

Dad : Royalty my child please ...

Royalty : your wife has a mouth , can't she speak for herself ?

My mother will never heal from hearing her first child telling her that she hates her

Mom : I was young and naïve , if I could take it all back I would

Royalty : aren't we all young and naïve ? I was taking care of a family that's nothing to me .
Everyone else knew except me the idiot right

Me : to be fair I also didn't know

How selfish am I ? I don't want to lose my sister

We got along so fine as friends I have no doubt ,
that we can get along just as fine if not better as
sisters

Mom : this is all my fault , and Royalty I'm willing to do anything to rectify my mistakes

Royalty : I was anything but a mistake , yet you managed to make so many with me why ? Is it because I'm the daughter of the prince who ditched you for his wife ? The very same wife who treated me like dirt , and you my own mother watched all of that

Like we're all so affected in this dinning room even my father , except this gorgeous man right next to my angry sister

He's so calm and it's unsettling honestly , but you can't miss the look of disgust he gets when he looks at my mother

Royalty is hurt and you can feel her pain , and I feel so bad . Because I was here witnessing her pain

Royalty : it gave you what some form of peace , when I've been hungered for days close to a week . And I'll get a plate of food right in your house

This is pain on another level , it's the suffering of the years . And knowing your real parent didn't do nothing about it

Mom : no , no

How will she even say a single thing crying like this ?

Royalty : I want you to hear me clearly , I wrote that woman off because she never showed me any sign of love as a mother . And today I'm looking at you my own mother , and I want you to know this . I hate you , I'll never forgive you . And I want nothing to do with you

Mom : Royalty....

Royalty : not now , and not ever . You're just as good as dead to me

With that being said she walks out , and this man right here walks to close my mother . Like both my parents gets so intimidated , I even fear for them self

Him : I hope you heard her , help me and help your family . Don't bother her

Heh I thought my Sky was something else but I tell you , Sky is nothing compared to this man

And right now I wish he was here , to defend us . With his walk that screams respect and definitely commands he walks out

My mother wails like no body's business , and I can't deal with this at all . I've never seen Royalty like she was today , and believe me you I never want to see this sight of her again

This is not how I hoped things will go , no meeting happened . Instead she lashed out and took her anger

Which was very much justified and I don't even blame her . She went through the most and had no one

Except me as a friend , I tried and did my best .
But I also had my moments

I'd disappear for days and days sometimes weeks , and she'd have no one then

Mom : oh my baby hates me....

Me : I'm leaving

I can't take the cries the screams and the pity
she just wants us to give her

Walking out Royalty is with this man , leaning against the car . He's just comforting her she's crying badly

But one look at me , and her expression of hurt changes to that f betrayal

They both get in the car and it drives off , I'm hurt no lies . I take my phone out and call Sky to come pick me up

.

.

.

Africa

If only these people know how much I hate seeing my wife cry like this , and because of other people

This is the second time she cries herself to sleep,
for goodness sake she's pregnant this can't be
good for the babies

Tyler : daddy

Me : young champ

Tyler : mommy is not okay

This young man is worried and so am I , he didn't
get to see anything . But when Sky dropped him
off , and he found mommy asleep

He's been watching over her , and now it's been
a few hours . He should be in bed , but he's
worried and concerned about mommy

Me : I know young champ , but she'll be fine

Tyler : daddy are the two babies angry , when she's not okay ?

The two babies really ?

Me : no , why do you ask that ?

Tyler : mommy is always not okay now , maybe it's the babies

Whoa , not my kids

Me : the babies love mommy young champ

He shakes his head no

Tyler : I don't think I like them

I laugh , not intentionally but how can he not like his very own siblings

Me : you're just not thrilled to be a big brother right ?

Tyler : I don't know thrilled daddy

Me : what do you know ? We're not so clever after all . Listen it'll be great to be the bigger siblings

Tyler : I don't know

We're really having a conversation about this ,
what a wow

Me : the babies will love having you as a big
brother

Tyler : I want them only if mommy is happy with
them

Why wouldn't she be happy ?

Voice : I'm happy my baby

He jumps off and runs to her , almost knocking
her down . She laughs picking him up

Tyler : mommy

Royalty : I'm sorry my baby , I've been a bad mother today

Tyler : but I love you

Royalty : and mommy loves you

Tyler : are the babies hungry now ?

I hope they are because she hasn't eaten since the meal they had , before we went to Soweto

Royalty : some still cares about the babies

Tyler laughs

Tyler : mommy is happy

Me : and that's great , now why don't we all just go to sleep

Tyler : no mommy is hungry

My wife's young husband has spoken , I order food them both . Even though him and ate

.

.

.

Royalty

I wake up with such a banging headache , I now get a piece of how people with hangover always feel like

Africa : you look so beautiful

I laugh and my voice is so scratchy , it's like I was screaming my lungs out at a groove

Me : why are you lying ?

Africa : I'm not , you're beautiful

What a husband

Me : with red eyes , scratchy voice and eye bags

Africa : with all of that , you're still my perfection

Me : I appreciate you , and I know I've never told you this before . But yesterday you stood by me , and for that I thank you

Africa : you're my wife , wrong or right I stand with you . In public I defend you and in private I'll correct you

I know ziyakhala manje (it's about to go down)

Me : I'm sorry for all of that swearing , and loosing myself like that

Africa : right let me correct you . I'm your man I fight dirty for you , I shout fuck and damn you name it shit and fucking . I do all that for you , you're my wife you carry yourself like a fucking lady . The one that you are , you're a whole Mrs

Oceans . You hold you're your own even in such unpleasant situations . Is that understood

A whole man I married , I knew he wouldn't be pleased with my words . But I appreciate this approach , telling me off when we're alone

Me : yes , it's understood

Africa : I'm to never hear my wife swear again

Me : never again

I was just angry , seeing this woman who's supposed to be my mother . Yet left me to struggle , it brought out the worst in me

I hate her and I mean every word of it , I'll never go back on my word I never

There's nothing bringing us together , she lived 23 years without me

She can peacefully continue to , as for me I want nothing to do with her

I burped , took everything out of my heart . So I'm fine with her

Africa : now talk to me . How do you feel ?

Me : I'm okay , like I'm really okay . I'm ready now to let go of all this , and just move on with my life

Africa : that means going to Ngwenya Kingdom ?

I heave a sigh

Me : yeah , I can't put it off as well . Best I get done with all these things

Africa : well I think your father won't let me in there

Me : how do I face all those people I don't know , all by myself ?

Africa : that man doesn't like me

Me : well I love you , can that man just make peace with that

My father can't do me like that , I need my husband with me when I go there

Africa : do you have any idea how crazy you were yesterday ?

Me : why are you changing the topic ?

He laughs

Africa : I'm not , just I really don't like the crazy you very much . It'll be a very long 7 months for me and Tyler , and he already doesn't like the

twins . Because apparently they're the reason
you're not happy

That's my boy , always caring and concerned
about mommy

Africa : wipe that smug off

I laugh

Me : leave me alone

Africa : impossible I'm following you to Ngwenya
Kingdom , your crocodiles will eat me while I'm
there

I say nothing , who said there are crocodiles
there ? And aren't those the ancestors ? Aiii
oAfrica

.

.

.

Sky

My baby is not okay , she cried last night . And
was so unsettled the whole night

Whatever happened there , sure did her bad . I
wish I had been there for her . But this wasn't my
portion , all I can do now is just be supportive
now

Me : here is breakfast

She gives me a faint smile

Asa : thank you baby

She sits up straight , making space for me on the bed I sit down

Asa : you're so sweet

Me : a grown damn ass man

She laughs slightly

Asa : my man

Me : yes my love

She's heavy and I hate it

Me : wanna talk about what happened ?

Asa : yhoh where do I even begin , there wasn't even a decent conversation there

Me : just fights and arguments ?

She smiles

Asa : Royalty didn't even want to sit down , she was spitting venom . And my mother kept crying , she couldn't even utter in a single word .

A spitting fire Royalty , I don't believe that . That woman is a sweetheart , let Africa not hear me say that

Me : so what was the end result ?

Asa : she cut ma off , and I don't know where I stand with her . She knows I found out before her, maybe in a way she feels betrayed

Me : but you also didn't know

Asa : she's hurting babe , I guess it's understandable

Me : she needs to hear you out as well , your side to this whole thing

Asa : I don't think she wants to

Me : reach out then , be my woman the bigger person and reach out

That gives her a smile

Asa : your woman the bigger person ?

Me : yes , you've handled situations before . And you can handle this one , you know Royalty . She's not some stranger child , that's only coming now into the picture .

Asa : you're right babe

Me : of course I'm right as always , now eat

She laughs and this time it's genuine

Asa : I'll call dad , and we'll figure something out

Me : good

She eats , and I hope Royalty will hear her out . I don't want to get involved personally , these are family affairs

Asa : and you won't believe

Me : what?

Asa : so my sister had this hunk

Me : shut up

Asa : hawu babe

Me : you won't , not with another man and I'm right here

I know Africa is the shit but fuck no , this is my woman . She's not even supposed to be looking at him

Me : your sister will have your head with her husband

She chokes , and I'm done for . Why get shocked while she's eating

Asa : her...her what... husband ?

Me : eat before you choke and die

I get off the bed she gives me a hell no you're not doing this look

But I'm doing this , walking out on her yes

.

.

.

Sky

Tricky thing for me about this whole situation ,
between these sisters

Is that Africa is way involved , and one thing I know is that he will protect his wife at all costs

That means , she doesn't get hurt by any of the people involved . I can't even put in a good word for my woman , if she's decided she wants nothing to do with them

Asavela is not the type that wakes up in the morning , clean cook . And do laundry

But today that's all her , a whole domesticated woman . All exposed because she's going through the most

I take my phone and call Africa , it rings for a while before he answers

Africa : what do you want ?

He's so annoyed , but it's me his annoyed self
doesn't bother me at all

Me : can we meet ?

Africa : Sky do you understand that I'm nothing of
yours ?

I laugh

Me : okay let's say the bar at your hotel , maybe
in an hour

Africa : I have a pregnant wife , you cannot be
taking me to a bar . Don't be an idiot

And maybe that's why Royalty was so angry ,
there's the pregnancy as well

Me : fine , anywhere then . But just be there

I drop the call , only to make him pick a place so
we can meet

Asa : are you going somewhere ?

Me : uh-huh I need to go see Africa

Asa : ohh

Me : don't , and I'll be back before you know it

Asa : will Royalty be there ?

Me : is that your way of wanting to come with me?

Asa : if she'll be there , and not wanting but asking

Me : babe your sister won't be there , I just need to speak with her husband that's it

She sits down

Asa : how did they meet ?

I give her a one sided look

Me : uhlanganaphi wena ? (Where does it concern you)

Asa : I'm just asking not in a bad way , Royalty was kidnapped and she comes back months later she's married . How did that happen ?

Me : must I spell it out for you ?

Asa : what ?

I never knew my woman can be this slow , or she's just acting or pretending to be

Me : the predator fell on love with its prey , and here we are today . They're both in love and married , the rest is history

Asa : no ways

Me : yes ways

Asa : so Royalty fell in love with a man behind her kidnapping ?

Me : babe that was a mistake , I'm still saying it even now

Asa : but this doesn't sound like my sister , she'd never fall in love with a man who hurt her .

Mistake or not

Me : well she did , and while we're still there .
Your sister was never hurt in our care , not even once

I get up to avoid this questioning session

Asa : so you know him very well ?

Me : mhm

I walk in the kitchen and she follows me

Me : I'm not talking about this , if you want to know anything go ask her . I'm sure she'll be glad to tell you all about it

Asa : but...

Me : uh-uh

She sulks but it's not my business

.

.

.

Africa

I know Sky wants to talk about this whole thing ,
and I don't wanna talk about it

So he'll just have to wait , until I'm there with him.
Where I can finally talk about it

These people hurt my wife , more especially that
woman . And maybe for this reason , she doesn't
deserve to be called a mother

Makes me think if she's even worth , being alive
right now . A damn pure waste of breath

Maybe one day , years later she'll get her
forgiveness . And I'll regret killing her

If only I knew my wife would never wish for her
back , but now it could be all the hurt and rage
inside

That made her spit all those words , and for the
sake of the small doubt in me she lives

Tyler : daddy when are we leaving here ?

Few days and already , we're leaving ?

Me : you don't like it here ?

Tyler : see it's not nice living in a hotel , and we need the money

Me : what money ?

He struggles to get on the couch , I give him a hand

Tyler : thank you

Me : you're welcome young champ

He takes a deep breath first , I don't get why he still gets on the couch like he's a baby and the way he gets off it . He just slides down

Tyler : see we pay to stay in hotel right ?

Me : yeah right

How does he know we pay to stay at a hotel ?

Tyler : the food we buy it , and mommy doesn't eat a lot anymore . That's not good

Me : okay I hear you , but we can always buy more food for mommy

Tyler : yes Daddy , but we need money for the babies

I don't get how one day he doesn't like them ,

and the next he's the best considerate big brother

Me : we need the money for the babies ?

Tyler : yes , they need clothes

Me : they can wear your old clothes , that don't fit guy anymore

Tyler : but no

Me : no ?

Tyler : not with my clothes

Me : oh okay

Tyler : yeah , we have to leave here

Me : did you tell mommy all this ?

Tyler : no mommy is tired

Why does it feel like I'm being sent like a messenger here ?

.

.

.

Asavela

You don't rush the process , you don't rush the healing I know that

But I don't want this hovering over our lives , I want it over and done with

I call my father he doesn't answer for the first time , I call him again

Dad : baby

Me : dad , I need to see you

Dad : how are you ?

I sigh , how can I be when we're going through the most like this ?

Me : okay I guess

Dad : your mother is not okay at all , she's not coping and it's not getting better

I do feel sorry for her , if I know my friend . Then I know that Royalty never goes back on her word

She doesn't say something and then do a different thing tomorrow

Me : I know , but right now I just want to be selfish

Dad : what are you talking about ?

Me : I want to reach out to my sister dad , maybe she can hear me out . And I'll be able to tell my side of events , and how everything happened

Dad : is that a good idea though ?

Me : I wouldn't have suggested if it wasn't

He goes quite

Me : I understand if y ...

Dad : it's okay , it's okay so what do you want me to do ?

He's calm down

Me : please come with me when I see her , let's hear her as well . As she hears us

Dad : would she agree though ?

Asa : that's why we have to try , because to be honest she's the one wronged here

And I want to know where I stand with her , before she leaves again

Because by the look of things , she doesn't seem like a person who's come back

Dad : okay , call her and let me know . I have to check on your mother now

Me : okay dad

I drop the call , and call Royalty . And in that luck her phone rings , after a few rings she answers

Royalty : hello

She sounds okay , or maybe I'm just hoping that she's okay now

Me : it's me

Royalty : yeah I know

Okay , let me just get to it . To save us both the awkward

Me : my dad and would like to meet with you

Royalty : why ?

Oh

Me : I want us to talk

Royalty : and this doesn't have anything to do with your mother right ?

Me : no it doesn't

Royalty : okay , you'll send me the time and the place . I'll be there

Okay this didn't go as bad as I thought it'll be , maybe she's not angry with me after all

Me : okay thank you

Royalty : alright bye

And the conversation was so cold , compared to how they used to be before

But clearly she's changed , and no longer the Royalty I knew from before

As they say pain changes one , but I never thought she'll fall in love in this manner . More especially with a man busy kidnapping young women and girls

Love is love I know , and that man is a sight for
sore eyes . But it doesn't excuse the damage he
brings , into people's lives

.

.

.

Royalty

Am I angry at Asavela no , for a few minutes in
her home I was yes

Because I felt like a fool right there and then , but
I'm over it . And I'm okay to keep her , as long as
it doesn't involve her mother anywhere then all is
well

For my side done with this , I've made my choices and I'm happy with them

I just need to brace myself for what is to come going to my father's home

Africa doesn't even want us going back to Cape town , he thinks we should just go to KZN

Get this and done with , then get back to our lives. So Ngwenya awaits me now

Me : that was Asavela asking to see me with her father

Africa : wasn't it just Sky asking me the same thing yesterday

Me : and you ghosted him

He smiles

Africa : I'm not his baby mama , there's really no need for me to entertain him

Me : don't be....

Africa : mommy no , anyway did you agree ?

Me : yeah , I guess it won't hurt to hear what they want

Africa : okay then

I lay back , resting my head on his lap

Me : I want this drama done and over over

Africa : and Ty wants to go home

Me : I know , he doesn't like this place much .
And for this reason , I wonder if it'll even be a
good idea to take him to KZN

Surely it's homesteads there , and already my
boy was puzzled by seeing a township

Africa : the things that boy puts up with , just for
you and to see you happy

Me : true that , but we need to get him back to his usual routine

I have two most amazing human beings in my life right now , and I'd like to keep them . I don't regret ever falling in love , and finding myself a family in them

.

.

.

INSERT 41

Royalty

Tyler : where are you going ?

His father looks at me

Africa : you're going out dressed like that ?

Me : what's wrong with what I'm wearing ?

Africa : young champ talk to your mommy

My baby boy laughs

Me : what ?

Tyler : mommy you're too beautiful , daddy is
jealous

We laugh

Africa : what is wrong with you ?

Me : leave him alone , are you jealous ?

He ignores me , I guess he's really jealous . And shame for him because I'm not going to change

I'm meeting with Asavela and her father , and I don't want to keep them waiting

Me : are you driving me ?

Africa : why don't you ask ?

Tyler : I'm coming with you

You'll swear Tyler still breastfeed the way he always wants to be next to me

And I can't say no , because he was left with Sky the other day

Me : why don't you ask ?

He laughs sliding off the couch

Tyler : mommy don't use daddy's words on me

Wow

Africa : I don't have to wait for you there now do I?

Me : no , and I can always take a cab

Africa : not happening let's go

I should have just said so in the beginning , we would have long been gone

He drops me and Tyler off at the restaurant , my baby is not letting go of me

We sit down , and soon after Asavela arrives with her father . They join us , we exchange greetings

Asa : sorry we got stuck in traffic

Me : you're here now , it's okay . Thank you for reaching out , I really appreciate it

Asa : I was scared you'd decline

Me : no ways , Tata let me just put it out there . I don't have you , I have nothing I hold against you. Allow me to apologize for my behaviour the other day , for disrespecting your home like that . Emotions were high , I was angry and hurt . Looking into your wives eyes , all I saw was a woman who didn't love me enough to take me as her child . I took all that out on everyone , that's my bad

He gives me a smile accompanied by a nod , and I know all is well . He's not a man of many words, when it's all subtle

Asa : since we're just opening up , can I just say as well I'm sorry . I didn't know , I only found out when you were gone . I could have told you when you made contact , I didn't want to stress you even more . Finding out this , I was so angry and so hurt . I stayed away from home for weeks , before going back

I think us three , were just dealt a raw deal . More especially us the kids

Asa : I know you're dealing with a lot , all I ask is that I don't loose a sister

Me : you won't , this is us mending the pieces and doing it right this time around as sisters

Tyler : she's your sister ?

He whispers I laugh

Asa : wow and who is this handsome boy ? you didn't even introduce us

Me : his name is Tyler and he's my son

The shock on their faces , but my baby is smiling he's happy . Mommy just claimed him

Asa : and you're married ?

I look at her father , she laughs . There's no way we're having this conversation right here

.

.

Africa

I walk in the bar , and he has three empty bottles of beers already

I sit down next to him , he gives me one look and keeps drinking

Me : you drinking like a fish , what's troubling you ?

He laughs , ordering two more beers

Sky : you finally grace me with your presence

Me : I'm here don't whine

Sky : after how many days ?

Me : it doesn't fucking matter , why am I here ?

Sky : really ?

Me : well

He downs his beer

Sky : need a drink ?

Me : no

Sky : okay , so are we good ?

Me : I hate these talks , must you be so fucking sentimental

We laugh

Sky : you went there , supported your wife .
Stood by her , and mine was just alone

Me : what are you there ?

Sky : are we there ?

Me : she's my wife , and she's your girlfriend . I'm a husband , you're a boyfriend . Do you see the difference ?

Sky : must you weigh it

Me : yeah for you to get it

Sky : fine , but are they good

Me : if only my wife wants to have anything with them

Sky : and if not ?

Me : then they must fucking leave her alone

Sky : must I be worried

Me : put your girl on a leash , and you'll have nothing to be worried about

He sighs , and I'm just there on my word not backing down on it

.

.

.

Asavela

Things have been okay , for the past few days . I talk with my sister almost everyday

I feel like we're okay , and I couldn't be any happier

Today she called in the morning and asked to meet , it's such a bummer that she didn't bring Tyler with

He's such a whole mood , but him not being here means gossip

We're at the park , it's not even hot . It's just chilled and seems like the rain , is soon to grace us . But the weather is great , and this ice-cream is just perfect for it

Royalty : we're leaving for KZN in a few days , and from there I don't know when I'll see you again

Me : is it safe to ask ?

Royalty : I don't know what you want to ask , but let me just tell you this . Tyler is Africa's son , and yes we're married .

Should I just come out right ask ? Or be subtle about it

Me : from what I understand you were kidnapped

Royalty : mhm

Me : how did you get to escape and....

Royalty : you're dating Sky the very same man I got to know and see , when this whole thing happened . Tell me he didn't tell you anything

And I feel so guilty being with him knowing everything , but he's the love of my life

And she's also married to a man involved , and even much worse than how Sky is involved

Me : well he did a bit

Royalty : I'm sure he told you how the marriage came about , I didn't even escape anything

Me : not really , all I know is your husband is behind everything

Royalty : was , and from there he took me to his home . We fell in love and here we are today , married with a beautiful baby boy .

The way she's glowing I can tell she's happy and content , she's even gained weight

If I didn't know any better I'd say that she's pregnant , but then she would tell me right ?

Me : I'm just glad you're all safe

Royalty : and hopefully from now on , I'll see you when you're in Cape town

Me : that brings me to ask , where do you stay ?

Royalty : right in Cape Town

Me : wow , so all this while that's where you've been ?

Royalty : yeah

I honestly feel like hating Sky right now , I
somehow feel like he just fooled me

Royalty : listen I have to get back to the hotel
now

She says because her husband is now here , the
car is parked right at the main road

Me : all the best in KZN , I wish I can come with .
But I'll rather give you , your time and space

Royalty : I understand , I don't know what to
expect there either

Me : we're hoping only for the best

Royalty : we sure are

We hug , and I bid her goodbye she leaves . I'll take a taxi back to my apartment

.

.

.

Africa

I'm so not ready to be answering Tyler , asking me this and that about going to KZN . But I want us to be done with this , so we can go to Manzini and take my throne back

My father had his reign they took him away from it , and I'm to claim mine

Tyler : daddy this is the last one

Me : put it in the car champ

He walks out with the bag , what I don't understand is the shopping that was done

Why do shopping in Joburg as if there are no shops in Cape town ? Now we have double the luggage we came with

But it's my money being spent , so I take it everything is fine and well

My wife finally comes out , and we leave . Tyler has already strapped himself in

Me : did you double check ?

Tyler : twice daddy

I laugh opening the door for my wife , she's a bit off . I hope nothing is wrong with her health

I get in and drive to the airport , we better talk now . Or this will be the longest flight for me

Me : what's wrong ?

Royalty : what if they reject me ?

Won't I leave blood shed there ?

Royalty : I've already taken the first rejection , I don't think I'm strong enough to take another one

Me : then their loss , and if they do your father better leave you alone about this home business

She smiles , I don't like her father at all . The man doesn't like me too so yeah

Royalty : can God just grant me a miracle this time around ?

Me : I don't know about God , but whatever happens I got you right ?

Royalty : right

Tyler : but daddy I got mommy too

I look at him through the mirror , and I'm not about to have this conversation with him

Royalty : of course my baby

The competition I have from Tyler it's too massive , I fucking have to up my game

Me : I love you before he beats me to it , and I seem like a useless husband

He laughs , while she smiles

Tyler : but mommy knows I love her

And that always gets her giggling , I can't believe how far we've come . Looking back , my son is the most happiest kid ever , with the most loving mother ever

.

.

.

INSERT 42

Asavela

I really don't understand a man that has moods , and I think Sky has one of those or maybe a few

He's mad at me right now , because I didn't pack as he asked me last night

I don't understand where are we going ? I asked but didn't get an answer

How do I just pack when I don't know where I'm going ? And right now he has clothes stuffed in a bag

Sky : will you get up

Me : babe

I have to beg him so he can talk to me nicely , maybe then I'll hear where we are going

Sky : stop that it won't work

Me : but you're angry with me

Sky : I asked you to do one simple thing , what was so hard about doing it ?

Me : nothing babe but....

Sky : once you say but it erases whatever you said before it

He can't come at me with this term though , it's just not fair . The same way he's not being fair with me right now

Me : will you tell me where we're going through

Sky : I don't know about you , but I'm going to
KZN

Aibo what now !

Me : what do you mean you ? What about me ?
And why KZN ?

Sky : you are not keep to go so fine stay behind
I'm leaving

He says walking towards the door really leaving
Me : but baby

He's out

Me : no way I'm staying behind for the what for

I grab the key , run out lock the door . And run towards the car

I throw myself inside , and he just drives . See me almost hitting the dashboard

Me : babe

Sky : don't make me noise , I didn't invite you

Me : but....

Sky : keep quite or I'm leaving you right here

Middle of the road , already minutes away from the apartment . Now ways I'm walking back

And I'm going to KZN as I am , men cannot be trusted . One minute you're dating you're together , the next he goes to the Bundus and gets married

While you're stuck right there in the city all by yourself . I'm not taking chances with this man of mine

.

.

Africa

Had we come on a weekend then it would have been fine to go to the palace

But we arrived on Thursday , it's only Friday today . We spent the night at a BnB

And we have to spend another night , because we can only go to the village tomorrow

I'm on call with my sister , she should have long arrived by now . And her lateness is just worrying me

I can't afford to have anything go wrong , or be done wrong in any matter

I want these people to accept me , and see me as their son in law

Asante : can you

Me : don't

Asante : okay , give me an hour I'll be there okay

Me : you should have been here Asante

Asante : I know , but I have my whole family here

I forgot there's like 7 of them

Me : fine , and I don't get why you're coming with Lubanzi here

She laughs

Asante : you're on speaker , he can hear you

Me : I don't care

Asante : yhoh , I'll see you soon

Me : you better , the other are already ahead of you . This is not on

Asante : look we're to spend the night at the BnB, and tomorrow at dawn I'll leave with her

Me : they said that ?

Asante : yes , now don't worry yourself . I know how bad you want to do things right , and just how much you want her to be your wife in the right way . I'm your sister I love you , and I only want what's best for you

Me : okay , okay spare me the motherly talk

She laughs

Lubanzi : I don't like your brother

I drop the call , and he thinks I like him .

.

.

.

Royalty

Beats me what Asante and her whole family are doing here . The husband and the whole 5 kids

I asked Africa about it , he gave me some story . Which I don't believe of course

That he just wants his sister to be here , for moral support for us

And if it happens my family is otherwise , Asante will be able to go inside with me

That's if they don't want Africa inside , but I don't believe that at all . All the way from the Eastern Cape , for support

Asante : you want some of this ? I hear it's good for one when expecting

Me : will you lie to me like your brother ?

She gives me a blank stare , I think she's mastered it . Being surrounded by such serious men

Asante : lie ?

Me : what are you doing here ?

Asante : my brother was worried and....

Me : stop

She sighs and walks towards the bed

Asante : Royalty

Me : we're to spend the night together why ? And why can't Africa drive me to the palace tomorrow, why you ?

Asante : because he doesn't want you to get hurt when you arrive there , and they don't permit him inside

Me : you know what it's fine , let's just leave it

Asante arrives Africa takes Tyler and all the boys, Lubanzi takes Liyana

And I'm stuck with Asante for the night why ?

Asante : please don't get upset

Me : I'm not , but I'm sleeping

I say getting inside the sheets and I hope to sleep for real , I don't know what's the meaning of all this

If Asante and her family can come here , surely Asavela should have come as well

She's my family right ? So yeah it's moral support 50/50 on both ways

Asante : we love you

I laugh , covering myself . She won't soften me
with her words I refuse

All I want is the truth where it is , and all of it
nothing else

Morning I'm woken up by Asante , she's bathed
and dressed so beautiful

In her Xhosa traditional attire , like she's a bride
being welcomed at the in-laws

Me : what ?

Asante : you have to bath so we can leave

I grab my phone and look at the time , it's just after 03:09 Am

Me : are you crazy ?

She smiles

Asante : come on

Me : it's way too early

Asante : and by 05:00 we have to be there

Me : why so early ?

Asante : respect

Me : we're not going to ask for a bride

She laughs and I'm so bored , I feel like slapping her

Asante : of course we're not , but get on with it

And she's not playing at all , see me getting up and taking a shower

When I'm done she has a Jeremane dress on the bed for me

Asante : look at that smile

Me : you reminded me of the day I was welcomed , as a bride in Botswana

That was the most beautiful day ever for me

Asante : don't make me cry , let me help you

She helps me get dressed , the dress is different from the one I was given

Asante : look the bump is showing , this is beautiful

I brush my tummy , and nothing beats carrying these two souls inside of me

I wish I could have told Asavela , but I want first trimester passed . Pregnancy is a very delicate thing

And you can't just go around announcing it to everyone

She's my sister , she's family and not just everyone I know , but I'm paranoid so let's just leave me as I am

Asante : shall we ?

I nod so bored , I don't understand why we're leaving this early

Me : can I go see my son

And I want to see that Africa , even though I'm
upset with him

Asante : unfortunately not he's still sleeping

Me : but...

She drags me to the car , and off we go . When
the sun rises we are already at the palace

But we're outside the gate , and not allowed to go
in . I've never been to a village before Botswana ,
and Batlokoa Kingdom is modernized

It's nothing like this , this right here is in the deep
of KZN . There's huts made with soil , and
roundavels are surrounding the yard

There are no chambers here , as we always hear about them

This is the rural at its best , I'm sure people here still draw water from the river

And they still use dried cow dung , to make fire outside . While we wait , three cars stand right next to ours

And it seems like something is going on inside , but since I'm a bit sleepy I'm not paying attention

Asante : okay let's go out now

We get out of the car , and the whole Botswana family is here . The aunts and uncles

I look at Asante , and she ignores my look .

Aunt : cover her quickly

With a whole blanket , like what is going on here?
I can't even ask them anything

These people are my in-laws elders , and I
respect them so much . I know to always be
humble in front of them

Uncle : let's walk closer

I know by his voice now , he's the eldest of the
Batlokoa

Asante : don't let go of my hand , I'll guide you

I'll rather it was my husband doing this , I trust him with my life . To know that he'll never let me fall

When we stop , I guess we're at the gate now

Aunt : makoti you have to kneel down (daughter in-law)

See me listening to her , going down on my knees covered in a blanket I can't even see

After a while a male voice speaks , passing greeting in Zulu

And the strange thing is that it sounds exactly like my father

Him : Batlokoa

Uncle : Mntimande

Him : mina ngu Nkosana Ngwenya , ngabe singanisiza ngani namhlanje ? (I'm Nkosana Ngwenya , what can we help you with today)

Nkosana , can it be my father was a twin ? His name is Nkosi

Uncle : as we have requested per the letter we had sent ahead before time , that we agree and acknowledge our mistake . Our son has taken your daughter , but it was done so in a manner that isn't acceptable . So we have come to rectify the mistake , and by doing so bringing your

daughter back . And pleading to ask for her hand
in the right and respectful way

Imagine my shock , so I'm being brought home
as a return soldier . And to be asked for in the
right way . So a whole lobola negotiations
welcome me at my paternal land

So this is why Asante is here , and the family as
well . No wonder Africa didn't spend the night
with me . That man though , how can he keep
such from me ? And when did they send the
letter wow I'm beyond speechless and shocked

Don't blame me for being in tears , this is not
what I expected at all . So does this mean ,
oNgwenya they acknowledge me ?

Nkosana : I hear you Batlokoa , and I must say I commend what you have done and I applaud and appreciate it . But you will still pay dearly for your deed , taking my daughter in such a manner

It's like I'm hearing my father talk , this is such an emotional time for me . By the time I see everyone I'll be a mess

Uncle : I'm willing to pay whatever you deem necessary

Nkosana : now I will take my daughter , and you shall wait here until I invite you in

Oh typical Zulu people hah , why leave them here ? So I'll be all alone in there with people I don't know

Uncle : we give her to you

The gates open I hear by the sounds , and
someone helps me up . When blood is one you
cannot deny it

And without a doubt this is Nkosana who is
holding me , we walk for a bit and stop

Nkosana : Ngwenya , Mntimande , Bhambolunye
zingabambili zobe zifuze ekhaya konyoko .
Somuhle , Ngenela Mthiyane , Mabuya
bengasabuyi baye babuya emaNgwaneni .
Nungude , wakhothe bayosala beziyolanisa
wakhangel'emnzini wakhangel'amanzi
abantukazana bebhodla utshwala . Vus'umuzi
ngokuvus'uMadonsela oqhamuk'esedonse
uKunene no Gamedze . Mntimande

The rain that pours , my tears are washed but I'm
still crying because of the joy and peace I feel

The ululating in this yard it's just too much , like I
feel welcomed I feel accepted

I wish I wasn't covered so I can see all these
people rejoicing to see me here

Nkosana : welcome home my daughter

See right now it's like I'm hearing my own father I
never knew telling me these very words

That this is home , I'm no longer lost I now know
who I am

Nkosana : Nathi take your sister to get dried

I don't even see who is Nathi , but someone else takes my hand and her literally run to the hut

Only my feet are a bit wet but I'm dried all thanks to the blanket , and to think I didn't want it

I hope they've let the people at the gate in , or else they'll be soaked wet . This rain is not having mercy

Me : can I uncover now ?

Nathi : yes

Such a bold voice , and I know it . I take the
blanket off and the shock

It's Jayden , so he's Nathi like but how ?

Jay : welcome home sis , you were never lost to
begin with . See I've been watching you

He walks closer to me and I'm just dumb struck ,
I don't even know what to say

He gives me one assuring forehead kiss and
walks walk , leaving me in another mess of tears

.

.

.

INSERT 43

Asavela

We are already in KZN , we arrived yesterday late . And just booked at a hotel

Only to leave this morning for going to the palace, the shock finding out that this is Royalty paternal family

I still don't get what we're doing here , and I don't know these people I'm with

I've learnt it's Africa's family , and it's just mostly his aunt's and sister

The uncle's and Sky are in another hut , with the king and the uncle's of this home

I'm just so quite and not saying anything to anyone , but what can I possibly say ? I don't know them

It's been quite a few hours waiting in here , sitting and doing nothing

I've been asking Sky what's going on ? Why were here ?

But did I get any answers hell no , so I'm so clueless like I know nothing . My phone rings and it's Sky I'm so quick to answer

Me : thank God ! Uphi ? (Where are you)

I make sure to whisper and not make noise

Sky : babe you saw where I am

Me : Sky you just left me with people I don't know

Sky : but....

Me : this is just not on honestly

Sky : babe I'll see you in a few

Me : we're still talking

Sky : and I have an incoming call

He drops the call on me , and he's lying . There's no incoming call here

See me following a person and running after them , not knowing where they're going again kill me

I'm to never do that again , look at me now . I should have just left him to leave

But I ran my flat ass after him

.

.

.

Africa

Sky makes this a fucking tendency , of me to always call him from time to time . He's ought to have gotten back to me by now , but nothing

And being the one wanting to get my wife , I'll call him . It rings for a while before he answers

Sky : yeah

Me : it's been what 3 hours ?

Sky : and these damn Zulu people made us wait at the gate in the rain , so imagine just how wet we were . We've just dried and we'll be going in

Me : they did that to spite y'all

Sky : it wasn't funny , if anything it was fucking annoying

Me : whatever shit you do , don't ruin this for me okay

I know Sky , he has a fucking temper . Yes he knows how to keep it in check , but damn it can cause havoc

Sky : I won't for Tyler's sake and not yours

Me : don't make me call you again

I drop the call , Lubanzi walks in . We're to leave for the palace soon , that's if all goes well that side and I'll be welcomed

Lubanzi : how did you get that woman ?

Me : what ?

We're not the best of friends , and that's not lie at all . We don't even dare pretend about it

Me : what's it to you ?

He chuckles

Lubanzi : you Africa don't strike me as the kind of man , who will fucking approach a woman and ask her out

Me : oh yeah right , because you're that kind of a man wena (you)

Lubanzi : how do you think I got your sister ?

Me : I don't fucking care to know , and I fucking wish you didn't get her to begin with

Lubanzi : you're such a bitter man

Me : fuck off

Tyler : daddy

Fuck , I hope he did not hear that , I can't have a son that swears . And more especially because he heard that from me

Me : young champ

Tyler : where is mommy ?

I swear this boy , will be a mamas boy . And no women loves a mamas boy , his kind are not loveable

Because they always put their mother first , it's always mommy this mommy that

Imagine coming second in Tyler's life , because his mommy comes first

That would just a be sad , like really sad

Me : we're going to see her now

Tyler : where is she ?

I'm not about to be questioned by a 3 year old no ways

Me : Ty go put on your jacket so we can go

Tyler : but why did she leave me ?

Anyone looking for a trade , I'm willing

Me : she left too early she couldn't wake you up

He just looks at me with this sad eyes

Me : Ty

Tyler : daddy

Me : go get your jacket

He walks away sulking , when he sees his mother he will cry his eyeballs out

Me : it sucks being a parents

Lubanzi : and you still have two more

He's so fucking amused right now

Me : why are you still here ?

He shrugs his shoulders , fuck I don't like him at all

.

Sky

The negotiations are underway and these fucking Zulu people are not having mercy on us . They're charging for disrespecting their home , marrying their daughter without their knowledge

Accepting her into the family , or the twins she's pregnant with . And not just cents , but a whole fucking amount of cows

They wanted real cows , and we had to pay a fine just because we don't have those . These people are just fucking leeches , but because Africa wants his wife

We're just making sure that we agree to whatever shit they say and ask for

So far we've paid way close to R80 000 , I'm telling you we'll be going above a 100

Nkosana : so far I think we can all agree this has been good

For them yes

Me : indeed

Nkosana : now we can finalize this , and if we agree like we have been doing so far . Then you can get your bride

This man is a whole fucker , and he's fucking aware of what he's doing

And everyone is listening to him , they're all just going on with what he says

Me : that's all we want

Nkosana : I want 19 cows accompanied by a horse and it's not negotiable

What the hell ? We look at each other with the uncle's , and I cannot believe this shit

Me : 19 ?

Nkosana : yes , now is that a problem ?

I wouldn't mind to just fuck him up , after all this is done

Me : and a horse ?

Nkosana : yes

This is shit

Me : what's the course for ?

Nkosana : it's accompanying the cows

Can't they come on their own ?

Me: and how much is one cow ?

He smiles and it's so conniving

Nkosana : how much are you willing to put down
Batlokoa ?

Me : a R100 000

Not counting the 80 we've already paid , because
that wasn't for the bride price

Nkosana : me and you we can come to an
agreement

I can even top it up , only because Royalty went
through shit with Africa . And she's still here even
today , stuck it all out with him . So every penny
is so fucking worth it , and Tyler won't loose a

mother like her . Only because of money , we don't make it like before . But we ain't broke either

.

.

.

Asavela

It's not after such a whole of waiting I'm told what's going on . I couldn't be so happy for my sister , she deserves all this much happiness

After everything she's gone through , and just been through . She deserves this . They sure met under so not nice circumstances , but they love

each other . And my sister is happy and in love ,
what I love the most about this is that she's loved
right back

Al this is beautiful , and you can just see how
much her father's family has welcomed her

They're all so happy and rejoicing , it's really just
so beautiful

I haven't had time to be closer to her , because
she's the bride and everyone is next to her

And all the sisters and brother , the cousins and
uncles and aunts are just there . She's so
beautiful in her Zulu traditional attire , you can tell
she's just been welcomed at home

And she's definitely a bride , and that man of hers has just arrived along with Asante's husband

I'm like the genes in the family no ways , even on the kids .

The families are gifting each other it's just beautiful , and I've never been to anything like this before

Sky : my baby

Me : you finally remembered me

I felt so neglected today

Sky : but....

Me : why didn't you tell me about all this ?

Sky : you're horny , hence you're this grumpy

Me : no

Yes I'm horny , but he shouldn't run away from my question

Sky : let's go talk

Me : I'm still watching this beautiful ceremony

Sky : you can get to see yours

How sweet ?

Sky : and there's a smile

Me : I want a white wedding

Sky : right

Me : ah babe

He laughs

Sky : then let's go , and this is no wedding

I give him such a bored look , Sky loves playing
all intelligent with me

Sky : this is lobola negotiations , and a gifting ceremony for both families

Me : please leave me alone

He takes my hand I pull away

Sky : and I'll carry you , right in front of all these people

Me : must you embarrass me

Sky : I'm your embarrassment

See me following him to his car

.

Royalty

I cried so much today , that this day has come to
and end and I'm the most happiest woman and
mother ever

Oh and daughter and cousin , and niece and a
princess of Ngwenya Kingdom

I've met everyone , and these people are just a
lot . I doubt I'll remember them all

And I have two other brother's , who are my
father's kids before he met that woman

So they're older than me , and I'm an aunt . I have two beautiful nephews

Twins are a thing here at Ngwenya , my older brother twins . And the younger one has no kids yet

He just recently got married , and I learnt our father was a twin . To Nkosana of course who is Jayden's (Nathi) father , so he's actually my cousin

But I learnt here when parents are twins , we don't say uncle we say dad

So Jayden is my brother in that sense , he's my father's twin son . I'm to call him brother and nothing else

My husband was so accepted , and everything went well . Now I have my Zulu watch isiphandla (Zulu goat wrist band)

I was introduced to my ancestors as a Ngwenya , before I was called and declared a Batlokoa bride

My son is so clinging to me , he was so sad that I left him . And I actually got into an argument with Asante about it

Had she just allowed me to see him before we left , none of this would have happened

Tyler knows to be my baby , and he doesn't like it when he feels like he's not getting his full attention

And with the twins coming , I don't want him to ever feel otherwise

Me : are you hungry ?

Tyler : no mommy

He has his head on my stomach , his father is somewhere in the yard with the cousins

I didn't even get a chance to just sit down and talk to him

Because during the gifting ceremony everyone was there , it was just a lot of people

Me : okay , mommy loves you okay

Tyler : I love you

I brush his head

Me : and I'm sorry about this morning

Tyler : don't leave me again

Me : I won't my love

Voice : I guess we three can take a walk together

It's my father Nkosana , that's just how I'll
address him no any other way

Me : baba (dad)

He smiles , and it's like I'm looking at my father

Nkosana : Nkosazana yami (my princess)

I get up , and he picks Tyler up . It's later the sun has set , the stars are just giving a beautiful view

Nkosana : this boy is a mama's boy

I laugh

Tyler : I love my mama (mother)

My father laughs with me

Nkosana : I can see that

I had to explain the situation to them , and they didn't seem to have a problem that I'm with a man who has a previous child

Nkosana : how are you feeling ?

Me : honestly I'm tired , but I'm happy I don't want to lie . I was so scared to come here , only to find such a welcome

Nkosana : we have always known about you , and Jayden has always kept watch on you

I don't want to bring pain to myself anymore , but I want to ask this

Me : then baba , why didn't you all try and reach out to me ?

Nkosana : we were advised against it , by the royal seer . But with my stubbornness I didn't listen . Your father crippled me for a whole year , and I lost hearing in one of my ears

That man can't be Idlozi elihle , no ways I refuse (a good ancestor)

How can he do that to his own brother ? And for what reason weren't they supposed to reach out to me

Nkosana : which is why Jayden , kept such a closer look at you

I didn't even know he was there , I didn't even know we were related

Me : I wish I had known you earlier , then maybe my life would have turned out different . But it has turned out for the best now , and I'm just grateful

Nkosana : this is home now

And it feels like home

Tyler : our home is in Cape Town

He couldn't keep quite no ways

Nkosana : do you always talk this much ?

He giggles

Tyler : grandpa I talk , I don't know about much
(Grandfather)

I couldn't have asked for a better son than this
one , such respect towards a man he's known
only today

But because he's my family , and my father as I
call him . He knows it's his grandfather

.

.

.

INSERT 44

Africa

Sky walks towards me , surely he's seeing what I'm seeing right now

Yesterday I was just too occupied , I didn't pay attention to anything much

Sky : tell me you saw that ?

I nod , I'm here to get my wife . She's being given to us today

Yesterday , they asked that she spends the night here . I didn't want to , but I agreed anyways

Sky : did you know ?

Me : no

Jayden is like a mini me on steroids , I'm the best, and what does that make him

He sure hid himself very well , and because I wasn't snooping around I never found out

Until right this moment and he's so fucking smug about it

Sky : can we still say we trust him after all this ?

Me : Jay wouldn't dare cross me , I'll fuck him so bad

Sky : mhm

He walks over to us

Sky : I should leave

Jay : my presence annoys you this much

Sky : can it sink in that we're not friends

Jayden laughs

Me : you just couldn't tell me yourself ?

Jay : I'm still loyal at all costs

Me : right

Jay : I didn't make a mess of anything , you taking good care of her . And you have never hurt her , well except that gun gaze . Which you're still going to pay for by the way

Me : the fuck I am

He smiles

Sky : no gun fights we have kids here

My mini family comes out

Sky : does this boy ever stay away from his mommy

Me : fuck off

We laugh , Tyler is just one of a kind . He found this new motherly love he's never had before

So he doesn't want to lose it , nor miss any of it .
And that's fine

.

.

.

Royalty

Tyler went out with his aunt and cousins , we're back at the BnB

I would have loved to stay a bit longer with my family , we can't ignore the fact that we have our own lives to get back to

Africa : I love you

Me : I love you too

He keeps pecking my lips , I'm just grateful of this time to just be alone with my husband

Africa : are you happy ?

I smile , because in just a short space of time .
He's made me more happy , more than I've ever been in my whole life

Me : with a husband like you , there's no way I can never be happy

He laughs

Africa : I plan to keep you happy always , you're just the best thing that has ever happened to me

Me : and so are you to me

I sure found my home in my kidnapper , and I don't even have any regrets

Me : but why didn't you tell me ?

Africa : you my wife , are very stubborn and so best way to do this was not to tell you

I laugh

Me : but daddy

Africa : don't , we both know you

Me : but I'm not

Africa : right ?

Me : yes

Africa : okay well then let's talk

He lifts my head I look at him

Africa : we have done this , and I hope now your father is pleased

I nod with a smile , because he sure is pleased . I had the most wonderful dream last night

Africa : now that all this is done , I want to go to Manzini and take my throne

Okay I did not expect this now , I thought that maybe he'll wait a bit

Africa : I can't ignore this any longer , I want my throne for the sake of our kids . My parents were robbed , I will not allow that to happen to me as well . My mother was Queen in her kingdom at Batlokoa , since Asante can't be queen there because she's queen at Isilo . If we have a

daughter that throne is hers , and our sons will rule at Manzini . There's no fights over Batlokoa Kingdom , but at Manzini that's another thing . If I don't take that throne my son's , will never get to have it

I get what he's saying , and as clueless as I am about royalty and thrones . But there's always bloodshed when people fight for thrones

Me : I hear you

Africa : but do you support me ?

Me : always , don't get out of this with no throne . Leaving me and our kids without you , I'm way too young to be a widow honestly

He brushes my bare tummy

Africa : that will never happen

I'm so not ready to leave Cape town , for KZN .
How is my baby boy going to adapt to that ?

.

.

.

Asavela

The bride finally got to get away from the
husband , and to spend time with us

Asante : you're a very hard woman to find

We laugh as we walk inside the restaurant ,
we're just out to have dinner just us three ladies

No men , and the kids are back at the BnB with
their father's , I'm only getting to finally see my
sister

It's amazing how she's only been known for a
few days here

But the people of this place acknowledge their
princess , and they're so quick to spot her

We get a table , and place our orders . Which
don't even too long to be brought

Me : how did your son let you get away ?

The bond and relationship with Tyler is just so amazing

I wish to have a piece of that some day with Emihle

Royalty : he's just pleased we're going back home tomorrow

Asante : Tyler is a character

Royalty : he's not used to this at all , he's a city boy . And he'll choose being back there , than being here any day

Asante : you're so good to him , and he's spoilt having a mother like yourself

Royalty : we spoil each other , Tyler is my number one man . Don't tell Africa I said that

We laugh , I've never seen my sister this happy , and it's just pleasing to know

Asante : your ceremony was just so beautiful

Royalty : well thank you so much for all of you , for coming to be with us

Asante : even though you almost killed us

Royalty : I just didn't understand why you came

Me : and I wasn't told anything as well , until like the last minute .

Royalty : and nothing is as frustrating as not knowing

Me : at least someone experienced my pain , but overall I'm just glad all went well . And I'm just so happy for you

Royalty : I'm happy you got to be here

And I'm happy as well

.

.

.

Africa

We're packed and ready to leave , my sister and my wife are just not finishing with whatever they're talking about

And it's starting to annoy me now , I want to go

Me : Ty go call your mommy

Tyler : okay

He takes his jacket band walks back inside ,
Liyana comes out and runs to me

Me : nton ngawe ? (what's it with you)

Liyana : Xolo , bendithi awusekho (I'm sorry , I thought you're no longer here)

Me : ndiselapha (I'm still here)

Liyana : zok'bona nini futhi ? (When will I see you again)

If I had my way I'll take this one to come live with me

Liyana : ungekho wena oLu aphathi kakuhle (with you not around , they don't treat me right)

Not again no , and she never gets tired right .
She can go the whole day

What does a 5 year old know about not being treated right ?

Me : ndizok'landa ke (I'll come fetch you)

She smiles , she just loves getting her way and nothing else

Liyana : zolanda nyan ? (You'll come fetch me for real)

Me : yeah

They finally come out , and I don't get Tyler . I sent him to get his mother not to join in

Asante : you're so grumpy

Me : thank you

Asante : I still love you

Me : uh-huh

She laughs

Asante : yhoh Sisi please go well , we'll talk on the phone . And take care of my babies

Royalty : will do

Now I love this relationship I see between them , she takes Liyana after we say goodbye and they leave

Sky and his girlfriend have already left early this morning

Royalty : I'm sorry...

Me : mommy no let's go

Tyler laughs getting into his car seat

.

.

.

INSERT 45

TWO MONTHS LATER

Royalty

In the past two months , nothing big not major has happened

We're still in Cape town , our lives are still intact .
We're still in love more than ever

It was just last week that , Tyler and I went to KZN to visit my family

We keep in contact , like I've found a home and it's the most amazing thing ever to have such a family

Nkosana is so protective of me , he's closed that gap of longing for a father in my life

He's really a father more than he is an uncle , my brother's are just the best

Including Jayden , I regard him as a brother more than a cousin

The none existent relationship with that woman who carried me , is still as that

And I still don't want anything to do with her , but I'm fine with my sister

We communicate everyday , and we're just two sisters who love each other

I'm glad what's happening with her mother is not affecting our relationship

And I love the relationship Asante and I have just established between each other

I feel like I've gained another sister , she's just the best sister in-law ever

No drama whatsoever , no meddling in my marriage . She knows her place and keeps her distance

I'm really regarded as a wife in this marriage now, my husband is able to just let me be on my own

Even without him , of course I'm never completely alone . Because he has goons watching over me

But it's fine , I've gotten used to that and have made peace with it

So close to 5 months , I'm just looking forward to motherhood . To two new-borns

Still not disregarding my process with my baby boy , that one will always be my number one man

He's come along to the doctor's appointment today

Tyler : mommy are the babies awake

I laugh , Tyler is just strange where these babies are concerned

Me : I think they're sleeping now

Tyler : but it's not at night , they should play

Yes they should play , because there's two of them

Me : maybe they're tired now

Tyler : oh , they'll be hungry when they get up

As always , the doctor walks in . And by the time she's done with the scan she's happy , we're all just happy

The twins are healthy , and growing . I'm also good

Doc : would you like to know the gender ?

Am I so glad she used gender and not the other word

Me : you want to know ?

He nods , I actually don't care to know

Doc : okay let's see

I wouldn't mind another boy though

Doc : and we have a boy and a girl , and they're identical

I don't even want to know how she knows that , but a boy and a girl is not so bad

Africa : did you hear that ?

Tyler : what daddy ?

Africa : you're going to have a sister and a brother

Tyler : a sister is fine , we'll protect her

Are all son's like this ? Or its just mine

Tyler : mommy the babies don't look like me

We look at him , he's staring at the scan in his hand . He always gets his own every time

And Dante always gets his sent to him as well , these Oceans men are just a lot

Me : what do you mean ?

Tyler : they don't look like me

Africa laughs

Africa : and how do you know they don't look like you

Tyler : I don't look like this daddy

Of course he can't look like babies on a scan

Africa : but you looked this this once

Tyler : no

Africa : son you're a lost cause

He says laughing , my baby boy frowns

Tyler : but I'm not lost

I give up

.

Asavela

Life has been great on me , relationship has been treating me so well

It has even brought a bit of glow , the happiness I receive from my man keeps me going . Like any other relationship , we have our ups and downs yes

But we always pull through , and stick together . And we're still going strong

I'll be heading to Cape town tomorrow for September holidays

Just a week though , but it's better than nothing . And I haven't seen him in three weeks

I haven't been home in a while , which is why I'm going there today

I do call my father once in a while , as for my mother that's another thing

She's still not herself about the whole Royalty situation

And she seems like she honestly don't know how to deal with it

And by the look of things it seems like Royalty still doesn't want anything to do with her

And knowing Royalty , it doesn't seem like she'll ever make peace with her

I knock my father opens for me , we exchange greetings and I walk in

Dad : it's been a while

Me : school has me by the neck

Dad : you're still doing good ?

Me : yes and I can't really complain

Dad : that's good

We sit down in the lounge

Me : and this side ?

He shakes his head , seems like he's having it hard as well

Me : where's mom ?

Dad : sleeping

Me : Dad what's going on ?

Dad : it's hard

I can tell

Me : is she giving you any trouble ?

Dad : not exactly , but she's not herself at all .
Your mother is starving herself , she's always
sleeping crying herself , she's not letting me in .
She pushes me away and I don't know how to
help her at all

This is nonsense

Me : can I go see her ?

Dad : that's if she lets you see her

I'll see her by force

Me : do you have food ?

Dad : there's take outs

This breaks my heart , she's just being selfish
right now

Over her own issues , if she chooses to starve
that's fine . It's her choice

But why starve my father as well ? I now I feel
bad for not coming back home

I should cook before I leave so he has food , I
leave and head to their room

I knock for a while before she opens the door ,
and she looks like shit

Sorry to say because she's my mother , kodwa
naye (but her)

Me : ma what is this ? (Mom)

Mon : what are you doing here ?

Me : isn't this home ?

I return back the same attitude she's giving me ,
she needs a hard reality check

And if I have to give it to her , then so be it . I'll
beat myself up about it when it's all done and
said

Me : have you forgotten that you're a wife ?

Mom : what's it to you ?

Me : you've turned into a whole spoilt brat child , locking yourself in here . It even smells , do you even bath though ? You're starving yourself , and my father in that process . If reality has gotten too hard for you , then leave . Because if you don't snap out of this pity part my soon , you'll lose that man

I'm just saying , my father is one man with integrity . He can never leave his wife when she needs him the most

But my mother is over doing this now aiii , she needs to get over herself

Mom : did he tell you that ?

She knows exactly he would never

Me : you know what your problem is ? You're too comfortable in this marriage , that you've literally just forgotten your place . Royalty is out there living her life , and if you think doing all this will make her come running to you . Then you have it all wrong

Mom : I want to make right with my daughter

She says tearing up , and I get her pain . But this is not the way to do about it

Me : then reach out to her , and this is not it ma (mom)

She walks towards me , and holds both my hands

Mom : please Asa baby please , help me

Me : how ?

Mom : please talk to Royalty , ask her to let me see her

Me : ma no (mom)

I pull my hands away

Mom : please

Me : I don't want to get involved in this....

Mom : don't do this...

Me : my relationship with Royalty is fine , I don't want to ruin it by getting involved in your things . Fix this all by yourself , find her all on your own . I don't want to go back on my word , and betray her

I walk out

Mom : you're just being selfish

She screams behind me , but she can scream all she wants I'm not doing this

Dad : and ?

I sigh

Dad : you tried

I nod

Dad : I appreciate you coming home

Me : yes dad , I'll cook something before I leave
okay

He nods smiling

Dad : it'll do me some good to have a home
cooked meal

I smile walking to the kitchen to cook , it's a good
thing we have a helper

It's the only reason the house is clean , and
maybe I should ask her to start cooking as well

Or else my father will starve here , I'll see to pay
her the extra money from my own pocket

.

.

.

Sky

With Asavela coming today , I need to talk to
Tumi about taking my daughter

Things have been hectic for us , in the side of work the past months . With trying to find new ventures and all , since cutting the trafficking off

Money has been scarce , and when you're used to it rolling in . When it starts slacking it feels like it's not coming in at all

That's why I haven't had the chance nor the time to talk to Tumi about this matter . But I can't put it off any longer , I want my daughter to stay with me

I'm tired of always having to have arguments with her , when I want Emihle and Asavela is around I'm not hiding my daughter , so there's no need for any of this

Tumi : you've been scarce

Me : you're working now , and Emihle doesn't stay with you anymore

Tumi : but she's here every weekend

Me : and I'm not here every weekend

Tumi : you've been working haven't you ?

Me : yeah

Tumi : what brings you by today ? Cause you know she's not here . Or has the relationship sunk ?

Wouldn't she love that ?

Me : you'd like that wouldn't you ?

She laughs

Tumi : you're not the relationship type Sky , you failed that with me your mother's daughter

This woman is bitter no lies

Me : my relationship is fine , I'm here because I'm taking Emihle

Tumi : then go fetch her at home

Me : do you understand that I mean I'm taking her so she can come live with me

Does she not fume all of a sudden

Tumi : you're not

Me : I am , and there's nothing you can do about that

Tumi : Sky no

She screams , and it annoys me . We're talking why is she raising her voice like we're fighting ?

Me : I paid for her , I owe you and your family nothing

Tumi : you will not get to play happy families with my child , go make your own with that....

Me : and this is exactly what I'm taking my child

Tumi : no Sky , she's also my child

Me : as much as she's mine , and I'm not denying you any access to her . You can see her anytime you want

I get up she's quick to rush towards me

Me : lay your hand on me and I'll fuck you up so bad

I will not let her do this shit again , she goes down on her knees crying . I try to walk out she grabs my leg

Tumi : Sky please no

What's with the drama ? I'm not taking the child
half way across the world

Me : stop embarrassing yourself

Tumi : you're hurting me

I can just walk away , and she'll get hurt and it'll
be like I hurt her myself

Now I'm stuck because she's grabbing on my leg

Me : Tumi

Tumi : please don't take my child away from me
please

She will cry and eventually stops , but it is what it
is . I'm still going to her parents home to take my
child

.

.

.

Africa

It's so sad to see these two sad like this , but I
have to do this . And they know it too

Tyler : when are you coming back ?

Me : soon

Tyler : but daddy when is soon ?

Me : in a week young champ

He sighs

Tyler : mommy left for a week too

Kids never forget , and I know from this one of mine . He still remembers that

Royalty : call us everyday

Me : I will

I'm leaving for Manzini , I've long delayed this
and I can't anymore

I'm that one man who will fight for power , and
spill blood if I have to . My parents blood was
spilled for that throne , and Dabula spilled his
brothers blood as well for it . I don't care to know
who spilled his , but what will stop me from
spilling any more Zungu blood to get what's mine

Me : I love you

Them : we love you too

This is cute

Tyler : the babies will miss you daddy

I crouch down to his level

Me : and I'm going to miss them too young
champ

Tyler : I'll tell them you're coming back

Me : that's big of you

He smiles

Tyler : talk to them now

Yes in this house I'm forced to talk to the twins ,
and I'm always taken videos of when I do that

He's already going to get his mother's phone , so he can do what he does best

I move to my wife , and crouch down to her belly. It's really out there now , but it fucking suits her

Me : my prince and princess

Oh and that's their names Prince and Princess , all thanks to the big brother

Me : daddy is leaving today , I'm leaving you two with mommy and young champ here . They'll be taking good care of you ...

Tyler : and Walter will cool for them always

Right

Me : as Walter will be cooking for you as always .
Don't give mommy and young champ any trouble
while I'm gone , I'll be back soon okay . And
daddy loves you both so much

He giggles , and the smile mommy has on . I
swear these two always gang up about me

Me : was that good

Tyler : too good , they heard you . But I'll remind
them.

Me : that's good young champ

I get up

Me : I love you

She nods with tears streaming down her face ,
she just doesn't want me to leave

I hate that I'm leaving them behind , but I'll rather
they come once I've fixed everything

I don't want my pregnant wife in the middle of a
war

Me : take care of yourself for me

Royalty : I will , you take care of yourself and
come back to us safe

Voice : I'll kill his dead self if he dares die

The hell does he want here ?

Jay : baby sis

So Jayden is a whole different person when he's around Royalty

He's some sweet Saint of a brother , who's always laughing making jokes

I feel like he has two personalities , he doesn't give me rest at all

Me : what do you want ?

Jay : I'm coming with you

Me : you're.....

Royalty : he is

He's using my pregnant wife for his agenda how now

Tyler : uncle Nathi

He's called by his name here and not Jayden

Jay : my favourite nephew

They laugh leaving us alone

Royalty : I refuse to loose you , if it means he must come with then be it so

Me : fine , but I don't need him

Royalty : you're Africa Oceans , you don't need anyone

I just capture her lips into mine , she welcomes me we kiss

And these two kick the hell out of me , these kids are jealous of their mother

They don't want me anywhere near her , unless we're making love then it's all fine

They be quite like the earth

.

.

.

INSERT 46

Africa

Problem with people who are given seats of power , even if they don't bow to them is that they always end up feeling entitled . Which is the same thing I can say for my cousin Bheki

Jay : this is my kingdom tripled

He's right about that , but this is nothing . People are just living in normal standard circumstances

Jay : there's your king

Me : regent you mean , to my fucking throne

All crowned like the throne is his , he takes his
damn time walking to us

I don't mind , so I meet him right half away

Bheki : mzala (cousin)

With the biggest smile ever he says

Me : Bheki

Bheki : ah always a great pleasure to see you

Me : right , I was expected to be back right ?

Bheki : your visit is always welcome

Visit he says

Me : a visit Bheki ?

Bheki : well what would this be ?

Me : this is my Kingdom

He looks around

Me : and I've come to take it

Bheki : there hasn't been a word that a new king is yet to be crowned

Me : I'm the word and you're hearing it right now

Bheki : maybe we....we ought to sit down and talk about this

Me : I'm talking to you right now

Bheki : I meant in a...

Me : I will not be civilized with you , listen to me Bheki . Either you step down let me have what's mine , or I simply remove you . Which one will it be ?

Bheki : you came ready for war I see

Me : well

Bheki : I hope you're ready for it , because while you were enjoying your life . I was here taking care of this village and it's people

Me : I never asked you to

He smiles

Bheki : I'll meet you at the battle field cousin

Me : I'll take my leave

We turn to walk away with Jayden

Jay : and ?

Me : I want the whole stupid royal council , and everyone in this damn palace in that throne room

He laughs

Jay : and I'm fucking thirty

We get into the car and he drives off . I'm not here to play with these people . I'm not here to plead or negotiate with them , I won't ask for nothing

I won't entertain anything , I don't need months or weeks before they give me what's mine

I'll take it by force , by the time I leave Manzini this whole Kingdom will be mine

I don't even need a day to rethink , it's best to act right now while I'm still heated up

.

.

.

Royalty

His voice is not normal , and his breathing either

Me : what's going on ?

I hate to worry about him because he promised to come back.

Africa : I love you

Me : please don't do this

He's not even looking at me , it's so unlike Africa to avoid eye contact

Me : am I supposed to still be fine with you being there ?

Africa : I'm okay

Me : don't lie to me Manzini

He's quick to look at me , I don't even know why
I've just called him that

Me : it's me

Africa : Bheki wants to fight me for the throne

Me : can't you just talk it all out ?

This is Africa , who am I kidding of course . He's
already done entertaining the throne fight

Meaning he's all for it , and now I don't regret
Jayden going there

I don't know how the two of them will fight off a
king , but I hope they make it out

Me : we love you , and your kids need you

Africa : tell me you need me

Me : of course , I need you

Africa : I'll see you soon

It's a while , and just silence before he drops the call . And his look doesn't give me peace at all

Voice : was that daddy ?

I turn and look at him , he's standing at the door

Me : come here

He walks in , I help him up on the bed

Tyler : mommy is he coming back ?

I so wish that he was

Me : not yet my boy

Tyler : oh

Me : you miss him ?

Tyler : I do

Me : I miss him too

Tyler : but mommy

He looks down , okay we have a sad person

Me : talk to me what is it ?

Tyler : I don't like that we will move

Of course he doesn't , who wants to move from Cape town to the Bundus in KZN ?

Definitely not my boy , and I don't want to move either

This has become home for us , and we've only been living in this house for a few months

Me : you'll be a prince there

Tyler : but that's the baby's name

I laugh , I don't know how I feel about my babies
being Prince and Princess

Me : okay yes but you'll be a prince as well

Tyler : how about you ?

I sigh because I don't want this , and I'm so not
ready for it

I just found out myself that I'm a princess , now I
have to be queen to a whole kingdom

Me : daddy will be king

Tyler : whoa , so you'll be a queen

Me : unfortunately yes

He laughs , and I'm lost where is the joke

Tyler : you don't want to be queen ?

Oh

Me : no I don't

Tyler : but you're already a queen to me and
daddy

How sweet is this young man ?

Me : you always know how to make mommy happy

I hope this works out best for us , I can't lose Africa over a stupid throne

.

.

.

Asavela

Sky is busy with his whatever , and we were really bored in that house all alone

Just the two of us without him around , we ended up going out

And it has been a fun filled day . Emihle is no
Tyler she's just a reserved child

But I still had so much fun with her , and now we
better get back

She's tired , and it's almost her nap time . This
baby sleeps a lot , but I guess it's healthy and
good for her

We get a cab back home , and as soon as we
arrive I put her to bed and prepare a meal for
Sky. We didn't get any takeaways for him , he
might come back hungry

A knock disturbs me and I head to open , it's an
older version of Emihle

Without a doubt she's her mother , and the attitude she's looking at me with

Her : so you're the one busy playing step mother to my daughter ? Have you no shame ?

So yes it's really her

Me : hi I...

Tumi : a child so young like yourself , why don't you go find a man your age ?

Me : why are you coming at me with attitude ?

She laughs , and tries to slap me I hold that hand

Me : bitch don't try that shit with me , I'll fucking mop this floor with your flat ass

She yanks her arm , I push her out she falls down flat on her ass

I close the door , and now we're both outside . I wait until she's up

Tumi : did you....

Me : fuck you , this man doesn't want you anymore . Stop being so desperate

Tumi : you have no idea who you're messing with

Me : like you fucking know who you're messing with ? Huh ! Undazelaphi ? (Where do you know me from)

Tumi : enjoy this whole it lasts , because you'll be soon out

Me : soze (never)

Tumi : we'll see

Me : not if I'm not done with you , because you can even imagine him

She swallows taking steps back , does she really think I'll harm her to a point of removal ?

I want to laugh right now , I have no guts to kill anyone

Me : leave and don't fucking come back here again

She clicks her tongue and leaves

Me : rhaaa ! Wandiqhela umSotho (she's getting used to me)

I don't even know if she's Sotho or what but hah

.

.

.

Langa

It feels good being back , but I have things to fix .
Demons to deal with

I made a great deal of a mess before leaving ,
and now it's just time to rectify all of that

Given this second chance at life and a new start ,
first priority is Royalty

But the fear of going anywhere near her , I have
no idea of how Africa will retaliate to that

While I was away I learnt that she's actually
married to him , I had no idea about that

A sorry is not going to fix what I did to her , but
it's a start of maybe finding a way to apologize

And then there's my family , I owe them so much
after the hell I put them through

Being on a plane to get home now , would be the
best thing . But now being here is what's best

And not forgetting the cops , I can only hope that
I get through what I need to do

Without going back to jail , I was so willing to go
there and pay my dues

But now I'm not so sure anymore , all I need is
just redemption and forgiveness

Sky : and you had to call me

Me : don't start , as you can see I'm bit

Sky : you're an invalid

Me : I can walk fine , I just need help don't be annoying

Sky : I'm not your chauffeur you'll pay me for this , you should have just requested a cab

Me : yes right , and risk being seen

He laughs

Me : idiotic

Sky : it only realises it's own

Now I so regret calling him over , but he's way so much better than any of Africa's men

.

.

.

Royalty

Me and my son out on a date because daddy is not here , and mommy is lonely . Those are his very own words , and I appreciate him saying we should go out

But now he's left me on my won , because he's over at his friends table with his family

He just went to pass greetings , who knew him and this Sambulo would be best of friends

After hating each other because of a girl , but I'm glad to see this friendship

Voice : Royalty

No ways no , it cannot be . See my whole body shaking without even looking at him

Langa : can I please sit down

He did not , no he didn't . I lift my head and look at him

And the bastard looks so good , he's a whole brother . That you wouldn't even think twice about giving a chance to

Langa : I'm so sorry....

Me : don't you dare

Langa : please I just need a minute of your time . I know words won't take anything back but....

Me : Langa Zulu I hate you , I even hate this good sight of you right now . I don't even wish death upon you because that would be so easy

Langa : Royalty....

Me : listen to me , I hate you with every being of myself . I hate you and I'll never forgive you , get that and stay away from me

I get up and get Tyler from the other table and we leave

Simo : Mrs Oceans

Me : take us back home

He nods and opens the door gir us , we get in and he gets in and drives

Tyler : mommy are you okay ?

I take a few deep breaths and take his hand into mine

Me : mommy is okay

Tyler : I'm sorry you're hurt

Langa just had to ruin me , and now my son is even apologizing for something he didn't do

It's men like Langa that gets other men painted with the same brush as them

We arrive home , and he gets me a glass of water . See what a gentleman of a son I have her

Me : thank you baby

Tyler : I'll bring your pillow and slippers

Me : thank you my baby

He walks up

Simo : I can deal with him , and it'll be like he didn't even come back.

Did he just conspire a murder with me

Simo : just say a word and it'll be done

He walks out , can Africa just come back . Before I end up having Langa's blood on my hands

I take my phone and call him , first ring he answers

Me : when are you coming back ? Because that idiot is back here

Africa : who ?

Me : uLanga who else ?

He sighs

Africa : please calm down I'll deal with that

Me : you dealing with it , does it mean he will stay away from me ?

Africa : I'll make sure he does

I drop the call , I'm a bit upset with him right now .
I'm only human

And I won't lie it hurts , knowing my husband hurt
a man who hurt me . Only to have him fixed .
Who fixes me ?

.

.

.

Africa

Langa is fucking with me , grant an undeserving
man mercy

And this is what he will , fucking shit on you for that mere mercy

I don't need this not now , when I'm in the middle of this nonsense

I make a call to Sky , he would know that Langa is back . And he needs to get him back from my wife , before he refer to him as an ancestor

Sky : yeah

Me : what did I say about Zulu ?

Sky : shit

Me : don't say that nonsense to me , let me not repeat this again . Get Zulu away from my wife
Sky

Sky : I.....

I drop the call on him , Jayden walks in

Jay : you're angry

Me : it's Zulu

Jay : he's just going to end up dead

Me : and ?

Jay : they're all gathering up tonight , and it's as if the ancestors heard you

Me : right in the throne room

He nods

Me : get rest , it'll be a long night . When all this is done , no one will ever know we even set foot here

He nods

Me : I will leave this kingdom red , and they'll seek for me . Beg me to come and be a saviour to them

Jay : it'll be a great night

It sure will be , and it can't be any other night .
Langa is forcing my hand to run back to Cape
town

.

.

.

INSERT 47

Asavela

Sky arrives and the first thing I do is tell him about what happened

And he's been quiet for a while now , I don't know what's his take on this

Because he's reaction is just so blank , and not giving anything

Maybe he's angry or upset with how I held myself, but that Tumi came here looking for a fight

I tried to be polite with her , I greeted which is something she didn't even do . The reason why I'm telling him is because I don't want her to beat me to it

It's best he hears it from me first , so that even if she get to him I would have told him already

Me : I'm sorry

He looks at me briefly

Sky : what are you sorry about ?

Me : everything that happened

Sky : you don't get to throw apologies for things you did not start , but when people start things for you finish them

Oh okay

Me : you're not angry ?

Sky : no , I'm just glad you weren't hurt . Tumi can be psycho at times

Me : well I'm a Xhosa girl , I take nothing from anyone

He chuckles

Sky : I'm sorry for all this drama

Me : no babe it's okay really

I can't hold him responsible for actions of a grown up bitter woman

Tumi is just spiteful , and she's an entitled baby mama .

People need to understand that when the relationship is done and over , we move we don't force

Sky : I love you

Me : and I love you baby

I've never fought for a man , even with the wives of the men I was messing around with

But for this one , as long as he still wants to be kept I'll sure do anything to keep him

.

Sky

Must I always be involved in this ? Honestly I'm so tired and so over it

I don't want to get on the bad side of Africa , but me helping Langa will exactly land me there

Upon arriving home hearing what happened between Tumi and Asavela

I don't need this other drama right now , I have enough drama right at my house

But we talked it out with my woman , and she understood I had no idea Tumi would come there

And that I don't blame her for anything she did or said

When provoked you have to retaliate , and I know Tumi better than anyone else

Okay yesterday was not a good day for me at all

Langa : you called

Me : don't give me that shit sit down

He pulls a chair and sits down

Me : tell me what you were doing trying to talk to Oceans wife like that ?

He sighs , and brushes his face

Me : do you fucking think ?

Langa : that was bad on my side but....

Me : no , no you don't get go say but . Simple clear instructions , stay away from Royalty . What was so hard about that ?

Langa : I just needed to talk , to apologize and.....

Me : no you don't do that shit okay , you don't....you know what fuck this shit . See me trying to help you again , I'll fucking put a bullet

through my skull . That's if you're still alive to witness it all happen

Langa doesn't value his life , and I'm done helping him

.

.

.

Africa

The strange thing at the gate is that we're just let it . No fights , no arguments and no problems

They don't deny us any access walking into the palace . And believe me , I know a man who has gone rouge

And these royal guards have gone rouge ,
they've shifted . And I'm sure the so called king
has no idea or any clue whatsoever

Jay : this will be great

Give Jayden a job to kill and he will do it gladly .
With no hesitations

The ancestors are looking down on us tonight ,
who holds a whole royal meeting this late into the
night ? . It's a whole plot to have me killed I'm
sure , only I'll kill all of them and leave no one
behind

Even the kids , they'll pay for their parents sins ,
they can't live . They'll grow up and become
problems for me

My parents fought for this , I am fighting for this .
My children will never have to fight anyone for
this throne

We walk inside making sure to lock , as that no
one will be able to escape this

Bheki : Africa what

I draw my guy out, a bullet to his stomach keeps
him quite . Just groans of pains and screams of
everyone else

I walk towards the throne and just drag him off
the chair , he falls down

Me : I came here to take what's mine , I said so nice that I won't beg for it

Bheki : you're....you won't...get this throne

Me : I already have it , and it's not a fucking debate with you

Elder : what's the meaning of all this ?

Me : it's simple again , I want my throne

They all look at me and some are even shaking from fear

Elder : we can talk about this

Me : no , either it's given to me I take it . With your blood

Bheki : and you think....you can kill the royal family , and ...get away with it

Me : I already have

He spits and it misses me by just an inch

Me : I don't need you to decorate me with your fucking blood , I'll do it my fucking self

He slides back on his back , I look at everyone in this throne room

Me : this throne has always been gained by blood , it's not different to mine . Only I will cleanse it with the same blood that's been shed

Jayde laughs

.

.

.

Royalty

Close to 20 people or maybe even more , and there's just two of them

But their sight is already scary as it is , they don't look like the brother and husband I know

The regent king is still down on the rug bleeding , as for everyone else they're fearing for their lives and rightfully so

I have to watch Africa take a knife and within a few seconds the 5 elders next to him are gone

With slits to their throats , the blood sprays like an animal has been slaughtered

The screams and cries of everyone in the room , it's just too much

Bheki : fuck.... You'll pay...for this

The façade he's putting is not working for him ,
he feels useless because he's on the floor
bleeding

Africa : their blood is in my hands yes , but you
will account for it

He says dragging a child that's maybe about 10
years or so

Bheki : no no , not my son no

He screams and crawls to where Africa is with
the child

Me : Africa no.....

Aren't we both too late , as he's already snapped the boys neck . I don't want to see such things , I don't want to watch such . But I don't even know how to make this stop

Bheki : he was a fucking child

Africa : the same way I was a fucking child , and you people shot down a plane that took my parents

No , my husband is in pain . I've never seen him this way , speak in this manner

His voice is pained , this is more about revenge that it is about the throne to him

Africa : this Kingdom it is what it is because of my
parents blood

He turns to look at the women , who are crying
and trying to shield the kids

Is it not Jayden taking his gun out and leaving
bullet holes in their foreheads , including those
kids

Now even the men are crying witnessing sikh
cruelty

Africa : I could rip your hearts out , but you're so
not worth it

He turns and becomes another Jayden , that
leaves bullet holes on their foreheads

The regent king is on the floor , surrounded by
the blood of those people . And he remains the
only one living , his cry is that of a broken man

Africa : was it worth it ?

He crouches right down next to the regent

Africa : you could have just given me what's mine

See it's raining so bad , those guns are silencers.
I doubt anyone is able to pick up on the screams
outside

The advantage of Jayden and Africa , there's no royal guards

No one in there had a weapon , only them . It's like these people were just caught off guard

And you don't prepare for something you don't know

Africa : the way I hate you , I'd hate even for you to be an ancestor

He holds his hand out to Jayden , and he hands him a butcher knife

I really can't take this , I know he's no saint but this . This is being pure heartless

He decorates the regent king with the knife ,
going straight for his stomach and tearing him
open

Does he not pull his intestines out like he's an
animal , he's opening this man up

Taking his insides , the screams have faded , but
Africa is not stopping

Does he not put me into total shock , when he
literally stands over the regent . With his heart in
hand , I've never seen anyone being so brutally
murdered

I scream my lungs out , only I'm brought to by my
baby boy . Looking scared as ever

Me : oh baby I'm sorry

I'm out of breath , I'm panting so bad

Tyler : was it a bad dream mommy ?

I bring him closer to me , and just hug him tight

Everything that happened I remember it as it is ,
how am I supposed to see Africa after this ?

I'm so scared , my heart is pumping like it'll pop
out of my chest

Does anyone ever kills a person in that manner
me ever be alright again ?

I'm scared but I'm also more scared for him than
I am for me

▪

▪

▪

Africa

Weren't the royal guards so nice as to have three of them drive us back to Cape town . We couldn't risk flying , airports would show records of us being in KZN

No one there needs to know I was there , of course I would be first prime suspect

We left right at the crack of dawn , and the day has gone by

In an hour or two , we shall arrive in Cape town

I take my phone and call my wife , I haven't talked to her all day today

Tyler : daddy

Me : young champ , why are you answering the phone ? Where is mommy ?

Tyler : mommy was crying at night , she's not okay

Shit , he must have been so scared

Me : is she okay now ?

Tyler : she's sleeping in my room

A lot of things are running through my mind right now

She saw Lang and clearly she's not okay after seeing him , but can that be the only thing ?

Me : okay , watch over her daddy will soon be home

Tyler : the bad dreams are gone , she will be fine

Me : okay boy , I love you okay

Tyler : I love you daddy

The bad dreams ? Can it be that the nightmares are back ?

I think long and hard about this , and fuck I'm damned

It's me , she's not okay because of me . But are these damn ancestors so dumb , as to show her what I did last night ?

.

.

.

INSERT 48

Langa

I don't need to be told twice , yeah sure my approach may have been way too soon

But then how do I go on from this ? Without trying to make amends and fix it

But I don't want Africa coming after me , so it's best I leave Royalty alone for now

Maybe when she's okay , I can try and reach out to her

I decided to leave Cape town , and just come home

That's if all this time this is still home , I slept at my house in Pretoria

I'm here but of course scared at the same time , I don't want to risk getting arrested

The house is still the same nothing much has changed , I knock for a while before she comes an opens the door

You know that look one day I knew you'll show up at my doorstep , it's what she gives me . She's not shocked nor surprised , and her tummy is so huge . It's like she'll give birth any time soon
Me : can I please come in ?

She moves out of the way and makes way for me to walk in

Thando : what do you want here Langa ? And it's still your house I know , but you left us . So why come back now ? After police harassed us , accusing us of hiding

Those bloody fools

Me : of course they would suspect you , but they know I was not here

Thando : what do you want ?

Me : I want to talk , and maybe fix us . Fix our marriage I...

Thando : do you have any idea how much you hurt me ? You cheated on me , not only that but raped as well . Makes me wonder how many have there been Zulu ? Me your own pregnant wife

Me : I didn't know you were pregnant

Thando : it doesn't matter , do you know what you have put me through ? And not only that Zulu you slept around and you infected me with diseases

She breaks down , I try to hold her but she pushes me off

Thando : today I have HIV and AIDS all thanks to you

That was just carelessness on my side , and I don't even have a come back for it

I don't have an excuse for it , and now that she mentions it . Could it be that I infected Royalty as well ?

I'm very much well aware that I'm sick , I don't even take medication for it . It's not denial , I just don't want to believe that I have to depend on meds to live

But now I've gone and ruined my wife's life , and I could have possibly ruined Royalty's

Me : babe please calm down , for the sake of the baby

Thando : my baby is nothing of yours , Langa
you're nothing to me and my kids . Guess what
I've done given you your divorce

Me : what ?

Thando : you were so eager to give it to me
right? Well it's all done

Me : babe let's talk about this I....

Voice : baby what's with the commotion ?

Hell no , another man in my house . Calling my
wife baby , and not just any man . But my own
brother , my very own flesh and blood

Me : Thando what the hell ?

Sipho : don't you dare take to her like that

Me : Sipho who the fuck are you in my house ?

Sipho : her man now

I turn and look at her

Me : what shit is this?

Thando : you were gone , we're divorced what did you...

Me : ungijwayela amasimba wena (you're shitting on me)

Sipho : brother there's....

I draw my gun out and put two bullets through his skull

Thando : Langa

She screams in shock , but this is nonsense . I can take anything from her but not this shit

If she wanted to move on , why didn't she do it far from my house ? And the nerve with my own brother

Makes me wonder if they never had an affair
behind my back all this time

And me being out of the picture , now gave them
the freedom to do whatever

This is not what I wanted to welcome me back
home , my own brother fucking my own wife

And they do that shit right in my own house , how
fucking messed up is this whole nonsense . I
know I fucked up and did her bad , but this now
ways . My own brother

And now I've killed him , I've added my brother's
blood in my hands

Upon all the shit I've done , and I'm still paying
for . Living this pathetic life

Thando : Langa

She screams again , I'm just looking at this idiot
dead on the floor

It's only when I hear water hitting the floor , I turn
and look at her

Fuck her water broke , and that's also on me
right ? Killing a man my own brother in front of a
pregnant woman

Me : I can't take you to the hospital , I'll call
someone over

Thando : don't be an idiot , the baby is
premature. I'm only going on 8 months tomorrow

Shit

Me : okay , where is your bag ?

I know she has one ready , Thando always has everything in order

Thando : the roomnext to ours hurry

I jump over the corpse of Sipho head to the room. And it's a nursery turned all pink

So we're having a girl ? But I can't stay and admire all this

I take the bag and find her already heading to the door , I hope this car doesn't lead back to me.

Me : where is Anathi ?

Thando : with my sister , please just go

There's nothing dangerous like a woman in labour

.

.

.

Africa

I'm even scared to see her , I've never been so intimidated by a woman

But I know mine is a no nonsense woman , and she doesn't even take it from me

I didn't see Tyler when I arrived as well , he's gone to Sambulo's home

I guess that's good , because I'll see I'm when his mommy and I are good again

Right now I don't think we're good at all , she saw me kill people brutally

I'm sure she doesn't like me very much right now, so I need to make amends

I walk in the room , but stop right at the door with just a few steps in

She's sitting on the bed , her eyes are so red .
She's been crying

Me : mommy

Royalty : I hope you know , you're not to come anywhere near me before you cleanse

We're still there

Me : not this shit again

She just stares at me and I've never seen her look at me like this

Me : okay

This is me accepting defeat

Me : but can I just come in to greet you right ?

Royalty : and you'll be touching me with those hands ?

Other men are not living like me out there I swear

Me : okay , I'll go now then

Royalty : and stay away from my son

I just nod , what can I say ? She's literally telling me what's what

Me : are you okay ?

Royalty : what do you think ?

Okay no she's not okay of course

Me : I'm sorry

Royalty : don't spit out words that you don't mean

Me : mommy to you , I'm sorry that you had to see that . But as for the fact that I did it , hell no I'm not sorry

Royalty : please leave me

Just like that okay , I don't want to argue with a pregnant woman

What's awaiting me is the ocean and groef salt to cleanse , my life is nice really

Me : I love you

Royalty : unfortunately I love you too

I smile either way , she still loves me . Even after all this , that's all that matters

.

.

Langa

It's been quite a few hours at the hospital , the baby is coming yes

But also they have to prepare a C-section ,
without a doubt

I lack perfect timing in everything I do , I'm just
here praying that the baby lives and makes it

Or else Thando will hate me for the rest of her
life, I'm so not ready for that

Doc : Mr Zulu

I stand up

Doc : your wife is ready for the Op sir

Me : please do whatever you can to save them both

Doc : I will do my best sir I assure you

Me : thank you

I say with a nod , right now I don't even care about being arrested again

I just want my wife and daughter to be okay , nothing else

Doc : would you like being in the ward ?

Me : we didn't talk about that , so I don't know how she would feel

He smiles

Doc : your wife has given permission , if you would like to be present

Wow so she would grant me such , even after everything ? I swear there's someone above who's watching over me

But I'm having those doubts now , my wife moved on with my wife

If there really was an affair , then surely this baby is not mine . It pains me just even thinking about it

Doc : are you coming sir

Me : yes

I'm with such mixed emotions right now , but if she's my daughter

I don't want to miss this , and live with the regret of being given the opportunity and I refused it

.

Royalty

He walks in grumpy as ever , and I welcome him with a kiss

His aura is clean , he's no longer heavy like when
I saw him earlier on

Africa : but mommy , the things you make me do

I laugh

Me : I love you

Africa : you do know that I'm not the most pure
man right ?

Me : you're anything but pure

Africa : and I won't change

Me : I'm not asking you to , I don't have breath to waste

Africa : that's not nice

I laugh

Voice : listen here , I don't know what kind of cult you two live in . But please fucking leave me out of it

He's wet and full of sand in my house , see him waking up tomorrow morning to clean his mess it'll be so amazing

He walks away Africa laughs , so I guess he's to blame for his grumpiness

Me : what did you do to him ?

Africa : you didn't expect me to go cleanse alone,
when I was with him

Me : Jayden is not my business you are

Africa : he's your brother , I suffer he gets a taste
of it

Me : you're bitter

Africa : thank you

I wish I could roll my eyes right now , but I don't
know how to do that

Me : okay so what now ? You went there killed the elders , the royal council and the royal family

Africa : and now I wait for them to come find me , and hand me my throne

Africa is strange , and I don't wish to live in this strange world of his

.

.

Langa

This small person couldn't be the most perfect thing ever

And having witnesses her birth , was the most amazing thing ever

Having her in my arms , is the best feeling ever .
Reminds me of when I held my son

Thando : please call my sister to bring Anathi here

I look at her , she's been out for a few hours

Thando : they can't go home , Sipho is dead on our dinning floor

Me : when you say our , you and who exactly ?

Thando : this is your daughter Langa , you can do a DNA if you want

Me : I already did

Thando : what ?

She struggles to sit up straight

Me : I find my brother with my wife , and she's pregnant . What did you think I was going to think?

She sighs

Thando : fine I hope you're happy now

Me : very , and Anathi will go home

Thando : how....

Me : Sipho is no longer there , the house is clean
so it's fine . It's late at night now , we can't be
bringing a child to a hospital ward

Thando : can I hold her ?

I give her the baby , and she's happy . I don't
know where to from now on for us

Maybe we don't stand a chance anymore , but I
don't want to lose my kids

.

.

.

INSERT 49

Africa

A bit of cleansing at the oceans , and some salt .
I get some fucking loving the whole night

She keeps rubbing her leg over mine , I pull out
of the kiss . We lock eyes she lazily smiles

Me : I should leave you alone

She frowns

Me : these kids of yours don't like me very much

She laughs

Royalty : daddy they're growing

I move to take my dick out , but she doesn't let me

Me : they shouldn't grow

Royalty : this pregnancy is making me feel like I'm crazy , I just want to pop them out

Me : pop them out ?

She nod smiling

Me : will you handle that pain ?

Royalty : I don't know , is there any other way ?

Me : get a mid wife , do water birth in a tub

Royalty : what ?

Me : don't give me that look

She laughs

Royalty : how do you know about all of that ?

Me : I'm a father to be , I do research . I read on these things

Royalty : listen to yourself

Me : commend me aibo

She gives me a few pecks on my lips

Royalty : we'll see when the time is near , we still have 4 months to go

Me : I can never thank you enough , for this amazing gift

Royalty : stop

Me : what ?

She is serious now

Royalty : I don't want to loose you

Me : and you won't

Royalty : one day you leave us to go kill , only
you'll get killed

Me : mommy

Royalty : hear me well , I will never tell you to
change who you are . But allow me to be selfish

right now , and just tell you what I want for me
you and our kids

Me : okay

Royalty : can you stop kissing me and we be
serious

I chuckle

Me : I want to stop but I can't , talk to me I'm
listening

Royalty : I want us to grow old together , and not
have your life cut off by bullets or knives . I want
you to be here when Ty has his first girlfriend ,
when he goes to varsity . When he graduates

and gets married and he has kids . I want all of that for our kids , and I want them to see their father loving their mother . To a point that they'll know and see what love is . And be able to know the difference when they're being used , and be like this is not the love daddy and mommy have . I want you to be with us until God decides to take one of us , with his own hand

By the time she's done talking , I've stopped kissing her . And I'm now paying much attention to her

Me : I'll stop

Royalty : you're lying you won't

I chuckle

Me : okay I mean that I'll stop getting myself into situations that might have me end up dead

She laughs

Royalty : it's so useless talking to you

Me : but I listened

Royalty : look now you want us to go live at a Kingdom you just killed it's people

Me : that's my kingdom , and I have no regrets whatsoever about what I did

And I really don't , so yeah we'll go and rule there where I spilled blood like that

.

.

.

Asavela

I was woken up this morning by my father ,
apparently my mother is on a quest to go find
Royalty

I don't know how insane that is , but I also have
no desire to stop her

Me : what do you want to ask ?

I ended up having to tell them where I live , and
all for my father's sake

Because living with my mother is something else as of late , so it's best he sees normal people from time to time

Dad : can't you reach out to Royalty

Me : dad no , I already told....

Dad : I know she told me what you said

Me : and she asked you to come here and convince me ?

Dad : no , I came on my own accord . I can't bare to see your mother like that

Me : but this will be like a betrayal to her

Dad : I understand , but please just think about it

He says already getting on his feet

Dad : I'll come see you soon

I nod , he gives me a cheek peck and leaves

Me : must my life really be like this ?

I take my phone and call Royalty , she doesn't answer for the first few times

Royalty : Sisi (sister)

Me : hey , am I not disturbing ?

Royalty : no not at all , what's up ?

Me : dad was here

Royalty : okay is he good ?

Me : not really

Royalty : oh

Me : please just hear me out

Royalty : this is about your mother ?

These words your mother , they hurt coming from her because she's our mother both

Me : she want to go find out

She laughs a bit and it's not a pleasant laugh , she's annoyed

Royalty : Asavela tell your mother not to bother finding me , I'm not lost I just want nothing to do with her

That stings a bit

Royalty : look I have to go okay , I love you bye

I feel like shit right after she drops the call ,
because she's the way she is now because of
me talking about my mother

Clearly she hates her and there can never be a
reconciliation there ever

Royalty

I'm walking at that green veld again , and it's only
today I realise that after the big tree

There's actually a lake there , but it looks like
some kind of a stream

I can't actually explain it exactly , it's just beautiful
no lies . And it actually brings some life to this
place

And it's so quite and so peaceful

Me : I can stay here forever

Voice : you belong to the land of the living , this
place is not for you

I don't even get scared , the same big crocodile
appears

I realise that I'm near the lake now , how I got
here I have no idea

Me : baba (father)

It changes to him , and he welcomes me with such a warm smile

Dad : this is beautiful right ?

Me : yes is it

Dad : it is the ancestral resting place of your forefathers , that's why you don't belong here .
Because you're still living

I just smile to that , because I am anyways

Dad : you have questions ?

My heart has actually been so heavy as of late

Me : I'm bothered baba (father)

Dad : talk to me so I can help you , as you're about to embark on your new journey

What journey is he talking about ?

Dad : relax , just you going to Manzini and going to be queen

Oh that's a relief

Me : baba the man I'm married to

I look down because I don't know if I should say this or not

Dad : he's a lot of things , and some of those things bother you

Me : yes , but I love him

Dad : and he loves you , that's the only reason why I approve of that boy

I laugh a bit , this man has no chill calling my man a boy

Dad : there's nothing to you being able to see his wrong doings , nor being able to come here and talk to me like this

Me : there isn't ?

Dad : no

That's a relief

Me : so I have no gift ?

He smiles

Dad : oNgwenya just favoured you a lot , and we don't want you to be deceived . So we let you see everything as it is , so he isn't get to lie to you . But there's a gift , one that allows you to connect and communicate with other people's ancestors

Me : baba I can't be a sangoma (traditional healer)

Dad : no you're not , but you're still able to communicate with spirit . And not just us but of everyone . Now your gift is to bring healing to the lost , and those seeking peace and closer over their loved ones . Just don't be scared the same way I don't get to scare you , spirit will come to you whenever they need to pass through a message to their loved ones and you're in their presence

Wow okay , I think I still have a lot to learn . And a long way to go , but I'm willing to learn . And I'm embracing this gift of mine

Dad : but adhere to your dreams as well

Me : I will do so baba (father)

I'm woken up by hands shaking me , and I feel like slapping his handsome self

Me : really ?

Africa : I'm sorry

Me : Africa what do you want ?

He smiles , and gets on the bed

Africa : you're not happy to see me ?

Me : how can I be happy to see you when you've just disturbed me like that

Africa : I'm sorry

Me : what do you want ?

Africa : you were smiling in your sleep , and as your husband I got jealous

Me : that's.....

Africa : don't hurt me please

I feel like I have two Tyler's right now

Africa : so who was that ?

Me : my father

His facial expression changes

Africa : I don't appreciate another man making you smile in your sleep

I laugh

Africa : it's not funny

Me : to you it's not

Africa : but mommy the way your father doesn't like me , I wouldn't be surprised if I find out he's the one busy showing you what I do

Me : you're so spot on

Africa : see he's not a very nice man

Me : speak for yourself , and right now you just disturbed an amazing conversation between us

Africa : what was he telling you ?

Me : that apparently I have a medium gift

He smiles

Me : did you know ?

Africa : yeah Nqaba once told me , but I didn't believe him because of what you did in Botswana

I laugh

Me : I was so scared that maybe I'll find out I have a spirit and I have to go initiate

He laughs as well

Africa : spirit or medium it doesn't matter , because I already feel like I'm married to a Sangoma (traditional healer)

Me : hah

Africa : the things you make me do , it's hard not to presume so

Me : we're Africans

He burst out laughing

Africa : I'm Africa

Me : you're not being cute

Africa : Tyler is cute , I'm fucking sexy and all kinds of handsomeness

Get yourself a man with such confidence and feels , you'll never go wrong

Me : I'm done with you

He laughs

Africa : so is there anything we need to do for this gift of yours to be able to work ?

Me : no it'll happen on its own

Africa : even though you make me do these crazy rituals , I still love you

Me : you have no chance

He turns away from me , see me begging him to look at me back

Me : they say that woman wants to come looking for me

That gets him to turn back and look at me

Africa : why ?

Me : beats me , maybe to make herself feel better . Get some kind of closure , for how she left me to suffer for years

Africa : what do you want to do ?

Me : absolutely nothing , maybe she just needs to hear again that I want nothing to do with her and I never will . Not now not ever

Africa : savage much

I did not ask to have this kind of heart , that says when I'm done I'm done

I just feel bad for how I ended that call with
Asavela , but I'll call her back and we'll talk
Such a relief to know I have no spiritual gift , that
needs me to undergo some whatever rituals

And as much as it pains me , that seeing Africa
doesn't help anyhow

But it's fine , as time goes on I'll make peace with
it . At least I know the monster I'm with

And I'll never be fooled or lied about when it
comes to who and what he is

.

.

.

Langa

Anathi couldn't be happier to have a little sister ,
and I'm happy to be a father again

As much as I'm at that point at that place where I
have no idea where we are as a family . There's
not much I can do to change that , but to just be
a father to my kids and nothing else

The doctor walks in , I have no idea when they're
to go home

It's been a few days now , but hopefully soon .
It's not really good for me being in such a public
space like this

Doc : Mr and Mrs Zulu and the little angel , I have some news for you

Me : that they're coming home I hope

I'm darn tired being here

Doc : unfortunately not yet

Me : Why what's wrong ?

Doc : I'm afraid to say this we did our best , to make we delivered your daughter as safely as we could .

Me : can you just tell us what's wrong ?

Doc : I'm afraid , we couldn't avoid it . She was born HIV positive

The wail that my wife lets out , I'm sure even other patients can hear her

Doc : I'm really sorry , but this is not the end she still has a chance of a long healthy life ahead of her . If only she.....

Thando : out

She screams at the doctor he walks out , leaving me with my head down

What the fuck have I done ?

Thando : see this ? You have gone too far Langa Zulu I hate you . I really hate you . Why couldn't you keep your disease to yourself ? You just had to be selfish and infect me , now my child has this sickness all thanks to you

Me : I'm sorry

I say with my own tears streaming down my face

Thando : I hate you , and I never want to see you again . We're done for good , and it'll be over my dead body that I let you see my kids ever again

Me : I...

Thando : leave

She shouts , I get up and walk out . It's a while
before I don't hear her screams

And I know I've broken her beyond repair , and
not only her . But my little angel who will live the
rest of her life with a sickness she did not ask for

.

.

.

INSERT 50

Langa

The mood in this house is like hell on its own ,
Thando is breathing fire

She's been back for a day , and at every turn she
bites my head . I don't blame her

Even Anathi can see this whole thing happening ,
it breaks my heart what I've done

I've hurt my wife , my daughter and Royalty .
And all because I thought I knew it best

Thando : get out

I look at her , she's been crying and her body is
taking a toll

Thando : leave and never come back here Langa

I sit down say nothing and do nothing , only my clothes welcome me

She hits me with them , throwing everything on me . Cursing saying every word you can think of

Thando : leave my house

She screams her lungs out

Anathi : ma (mom)

He says crying at the corridor , but Thando us not even paying attention to him

I can't bare to watch all this , I'm a coward now I know

I get up she slaps me more than twice , still swearing and saying whatever

I walk out getting into my car , heading to my car.
I drive to my house

Me : fuck

I pour a drink , and just end up smashing the glass against the wall

What now ? I sit down and these fucking damn tears

I've fucking messed up , and there's no going back from this . I don't know how to fix any of this

I get up and grab a pen and a paper , this is not mending anything . But I'm at my wit's end right now

.

.

.

Asavela

I had some talk with my mother , Royalty made a call and told her what she didn't want to hear

That she'll never have anything to do with her ,
and yes that broke my mother even worse

But she's over her pity party , well that's just on
some days

Because on others she's back to herself ,
sleeping not eating not bathing and just crying

I'm done trying to help her , she's a grown old
woman . Only she can help herself

As for my father , I make sure he's well taken
care of . I make sure the helper comes more
often

And I've added a bit of amount on her salary ,
she's just a great help to me . I've even
considered going back home , but it'll be a
problem when I have to leave for Cape town

There's nothing that I want more than making my
relationship with Sky work , and having to cut the
trips short won't help

So I'm better off here on my own , and going
home occasionally from time to time

I never thought I'll be this much happy , being in
a relationship

With a man I call mine , and not just choosing it
for benefits of whatever . In such a short space of
time , I found love and I got loved back

I found a sister in a friend , and it couldn't be the most amazing thing ever . Life still holds more for us , and hopefully nothing but happiness

But I ask we all just have the strength to keep pushing through no matter what

My phone rings bringing me out of my thoughts , and seeing the caller it just brings a smile on my face

Me : baby

Sky : I miss you

It wouldn't be my man

Me : well you're in luck

Sky : really ?

Me : open the door

Sky : no kidding , I'll hate you

I laugh , it's not a while he opens the door and
I'm standing right here

Sky : I fucking love you

I laugh and he just engulfs me into a hug
accompanied by a kiss breaking the hug

This right here is my happy place , giving Sky my
number is the one thing Langa didn't fuck up

.

.

Sky

Having my baby here , is the best thing ever . I
don't ever regret getting this woman as mine

And I'm hoping I get to keep her , for years and
years to come

And now I've just become the most happiest man
ever

Emihle : Tata khona Asa ? (Daddy is Asavela
here)

Someone is very much happy to be coming to
stay with daddy

But in her little mind I still think , she thinks it's
just for short while and not forget

Me : yeah ukhona (she's here)

She claps her hands laughing , I guess my baby
has just gotten a new favourite here

My two best girls , and she calls . I've been gone
for a while

Me : babe

Emihle : babe

We laugh , I don't even know what if she knows
what babe is or what it means

Asa : how far are you ?

Me : not too far , we'll be there soon

Asa : great I made her favourite

Wow so now they get along to that point , what
more can a man ask for ?

.

.

.

Royalty

***Royalty I lack the words to utter , I know the hurt and pain I've caused and brought you . And there's nothing I can say or do , to take it all back. I'm sorry lying about being married , i'm sorry I lied about having a child . And I'm mostly sorry for taking something so important to you such as your pride . And in the manner I did , I can't take it all back . I'm sorry for infecting you . Now I see how many lives I've just ruined , my wife is infected as well . And my new born daughter is born with the infection , and I have no one to blame but myself . I don't deserve your forgiveness , and it's selfish of me to even ask for it . I hope you find your healing , and that some day you find the forgiveness . I know it won't be now nor today or tomorrow . I will live with this regret for the rest of my life , because there's**

**no way I can even forgive myself for what I've
done to you***

I break down crying , this man just doesn't want
to leave me alone

Me : I hate him so much

Africa holds me in his arms , with every tear I
drop it feels like my heart is being ripped apart

Me : I will never forgive him I won't

No years or decades will make me forgive Langa,
and I don't need to forgive him to be able to heal
and move on with my life

When it rains it sure pours , and this whole nonsense that headlong starts with you before it goes to the perpetrator is just nonsense

What do I need to forgive myself for ? When I'm the one who has been wronged by a man who felt entitled to what didn't belong ti him ?

Me : I hate him

Langa broke me in the most painful way ever. I don't care about his wife , I don't care about his daughter

I have my own son and daughter that I'm worried about . Doesn't he know peace ? Does he lack it this much that he sees it got to bother me ?

I don't want his apology because I'll never forgive him , not now not ever . That man broke me , I will live with that scar for the rest of my life and it won't go away

Whether I forgive him or not , it doesn't matter and you know what I choose not to forgive him . I wish he burns in hell , if that place ever really does exist

Rape is not something that goes away , it doesn't fade away . It doesn't care how many years it takes

Whether I find the healing or peace even the forgiveness it won't matter

I'm living with HIV , I take pills every single day of my life because of him

I didn't go out there asking for it , I didn't beg him to do it . The hell do I need the forgiveness for
He has no idea what he's done to me , and he will never know

So it's easy for him to write a stupid letter with a stupid apology , one that doesn't even mean a thing

Don't I deserve to be rid of him ? He made a choice and wasn't forced to do so

With every tear I drop , I feel like a piece of me is being ripped apart

How can one person bring me so much hurt and pain ? Not even that woman who carried me has caused me this much pain

Langa is a disgrace to men , and now I'll always live with this scare caused to me by a men

I hope I raise better men than Langa in Tyler and Prince

That they know women are not to be toyed with , but precious jewels to be cherished

I have this man of mine right here wiping my tears , tears of a pain that he didn't cause

Africa : I'll never let anyone hurt you again

Me : I'm sorry you're dealing with a pain you didn't cause

Africa : I'm here now always and forever , and I'll deal with whatever I have to deal with

I've cried it's enough , I'll never let Langa or any other man have so much power over me again

I have a husband , a son and two beautiful babies coming

This is my pain , I got raped by a man I loved and trusted

But what I have now is my happiness , I've felt
the wrath of love

And I hope it was enough , now can I get only
better and nothing else

Langa

I'm nothing but a useless bring , Thando is really
done with me

And I'm sure I'll never see my kids ever again ,
and I've brought all that on myself

Can this be a lesson to all the other men out there , when she says no she means no

It doesn't matter what you've done for her , whether she asked or not it doesn't matter

Let no be no

I've been drinking myself to sleep as of late , nothing makes sense anymore

And I've lost it all , and to think I've had it all . This is all how it ends for me

A loud thud on the roof , that gets me scared . There's even a rumbling of thunder and strikes of lighting all of a sudden

The weather was just fine , and I'm very much sober . I have my bag in hand , to leave South Africa for good and never be back . I open the door , and I'm surprised by who I think it's Africa

But this creature has wings , and the eyes . It can't be him , how can it be ?

Me : wh.....

I can't even utter anything out , he or it walks closer and I'm forced right back inside the house

The lighting keeps making contact with these wings , and the more that happens the more he rages

Me : Africa ?

Africa : I don't do well with people who hurt my wife Zulu

The voice has changed as well , but it's him it's really him . And I thought going back inside the house would stop him

But no , he manages to get through the door just fine . The wings gone , only the appear when he's inside

.

.

.

Royalty

I saw that rage inside his eyes , and now it's
come out in full force

I went to bed with him , but now I know he's not
here . This is a dream

But as always I've learnt to know that it's a dream
to me , but it's really happening

But I also know how useless it is to see him ,
because there's nothing I can do

He has Langa cornered , there's nowhere to run .
How he got to Joburg when he went to bed with
me beats me

But then he has those wings out , and the
weather is bad where he is . Meaning he's able
to feed off

And he's powerful , Langa doesn't stand a
change here . But then again a fight with a
creature , no human can stand a chance

Langa : I....

He doesn't get to finish his words as he's thrown
against the wall , and he falls down groaning in
pain

And he's broken something without a doubt , it's
a few more throws after that one . Even the walls
are starting to crack , I've seen Africa angry but
not like this

And today I don't even think I want him to stop ,
as I always cry and call him out to

He has Langa in his hands , standing and feet off
the floor . He looks so bad way too battered

Africa : you're fucking useless vessel

He says with such rage , he rips off Langa's
clothes leaving him with nothing on

I so wish I wasn't seeing this , but I don't even
know how to stop it

I don't know how to wake up on my own from
this, and I can't always have my son see me like
this

He's only a child and I don't need him
traumatized

I don't know where Africa got the blade that just
goes through Langa's chest

Down to his stomach , he's opening him up , and
if I thought what he did to Bheki was worse

I hadn't seen anything , because this is worse
than that . When a man cries like this , know that
it's bad . But his screams and cries are falling on
death ears

Africa plays with the blade all over Langa body ,
there's no place that he doesn't cut him open

And having kicked his manhood before , it was
nothing compared to this

He's cutting off Langa's manhood off along with
his balls , it's a gruesome sight to see

He doesn't get to live another second after all this
much pain he's felt , and the wounds from the
blade

Not to mention the blood that he's just lost . It's
only when Africa sees that Langa is dead he lets
him go

.

▪

▪

Africa

See how I've mastered knowing the routine in my house

Coming back from Joburg I didn't even bother coming home

I headed to the beach and got my salt and cleansed , and now I'm clean I'm okay I can go home

I can't be told the same thing over and over
again, like I don't listen

My wife is still asleep , I go check on Tyler and
he's asleep . I also get into bed and sleep , so
peaceful more than I've ever as of late

Morning I'm woken up by her gaze , and she's
not even blinking

Me : mommy

Royalty : wipe that smile off

Oh shit she saw yes

Me : your father hates me

She ignores me going into the bathroom , and I
get up following her

Royalty : stay out

I take the sponge from her am start washing her
body , she lets me be

And the sleep vanishes now , now I'm wide
awake . Not that I have any desire to go back to
sleep

We end up both just showering , I dry and lotion
her she gets dressed while I dry and lotion myself

Royalty : can we just put all this behind us ?

I zip up my pants and hold her hand

Me : I've already done it

Langa's death should have happened long ago , I don't even know why I spared him to begin with

Do you think I'll ever make such a fucking stupid mistake again ? Never

Royalty : thank you

I take it even though I don't know what's it for .
And I don't even want to ask what's it for

Royalty : take us out today

I chuckle , she gives me a peck and I know she's won I've lost . She walks out leaving me to make the bed , marriage is all good and all

Until she's pregnant or she doesn't feel like doing any chores , or she just wants to be your baby

But I'm not complaining , I found the best woman ever . And I never thought I could love , and let another woman have my heart

But she managed to do that , and without even doing anything or saying anything

I've achieved so much with this woman by my side , found a mother for my son . Found a wife

for myself , my very own rib and perfection the
one who completes me

I've managed to let go of kidnapping women ,
putting money first before humanity

I've managed to fight for what belongs to me ,
and it's only a matter of time I'll get my kingdom.
The death of the royal family made it everywhere,
and I've let them deal with their loss . I walk down
and I'm welcomed by the royal seer

Ngcweti : Nkosi yami (my king)

I knew he was going to find me one way or
another

Me : eyes of the gods , to what do I owe the
pleasure

Ngcweti : your kingdom is without king , the throne is vacant and open to strangers . It would be a great fault to oZungu oManzini , to let it remain in this way . My king your people and your kingdom await you

I smile , it's about fucking time . I look at my wife

Me : kaManzini

She returns the smile , and I know this is the beginning of us as king and queen

Royalty : Manzini

I'm taking claim of who and what I am . That's
King Africa Zungu , and I spilled my blood for that
throne . They felt my wrath for it

.

.

The End